

World Teacher

– Other World Style Education & Agent –

- Volume 17 - The Country of Beastkin

**-Author-
NEKO Kouichi**

**-Artist-
Nardack**

[Bayabusco Translation]

Chapter 118

Occasional Indulgence

One year had passed since Fia got the seed from Shishou.

Our journey continued, and... we experienced many things like local foods and cultures, and monsters that we saw for the first time.

Of course, our relationships were good, and we haven't neglected any training.

These days, the disciples didn't only learn from me. They thought for themselves and repeating trial and error. Everyone was getting strong enough not to easily defeated in the mock battles.

However, no matter how strong they became, their behavior didn't change much.

For example... in a certain town inn, Emilia crawled into the bed while saying that it was a mating season.

I asked Reus after that, be he said that he didn't know such a thing. Since it was suspicious, I cross-examined her, and it was... a lie.

{...I will not stroke your head for a while.} (Sirius)

{Aah!? Sorry about that!} (Emilia)

Emilia apologized while crying. After that, she became obedient after a while.

Goodness... I wanted her not to say something delicate such as a mating season. I didn't want her to say something trivial. I told her to come properly like normal in the case of crawling at night.

When it came to training with Reus, I told him to attack me anytime he wanted. But, there was a brisk encounter of Reus who was trying to attack with Reese who was creeping at night.

{...I'm sorry. Reese-ane.} (Reus)

{...Yeah.} (Reese)

Since then, Reus stopped attacking me when I was asleep.

I felt sorry about this, so I firmly said sorry to Reus.

In addition, there were also times I was going to be shot when Fia was trying out the bow she received from Shishou.

There were also times when I got surprised by arrow coming from the side while I was having mock battles with Reus. By the way, Fia was practicing shooting on the side at that time.

According to Fia, it had something like a will and that maybe because the bow was a part of Shishou. She didn't really talk about it, but it seemed she felt it that way.

As a result of discussing this for a while, it turned out that the mischievous nature of Shishou and the thought that think of Asha's sister loaded in the string attached, the scene of Fia continued preaching her own bow for a couple of hours was extremely surreal.

{So, have you decided her name?} (Sirius)

{Archaerion... I think? Eh? Hei!? That's too much.} (Fia)

Whether it felt nice to be named by the owner, it was a strange bow that subtly shined and moved.

However, it would obediently listened the order of Fia, and it was an excellent weapon since it provided variety of assistance.

Finally, it was Hokuto. There were a lot of times that he hurled himself on me when he was too happy.

It was as if he did that more on me compared to the enemies. Indeed, that one year was a very fulfilling year.



We spent our time in that way while going around the Adload Continent. And then, when we found a ship that could carry our carriage at the port town we arrived in, we decided to go to another continent.

After a few days of cruising, we arrived at the new continent... the Hypne Continent.

The Hypne Continent.

It was the largest continent in the world. It was said to be a bit difficult continent compared to other continents due to the differences in region's temperature and environment.

For that reason, there were more distinct villages and countries than in the Adload Continent, and there seemed to be a wide variety of races.

Although it seemed to be dangerous in various ways, when I thought that we would see rare things someday, and... that time had finally arrived.

"This is our first time to come to this continent, isn't it? I'm looking forward what will happen next." (Fia)

As we got off the ship, Fia, who stepped into the new continent for the first time, muttered while deeply moved.

There was no apparent change in appearance in one year because she was an Elf, but she grew to become a magical warrior who wasn't only mastering Spirit Magic, but also the bow received from Shishou.

"Isn't it a bit cold? Somehow, the air feels different... I feel that I have really arrived in a new continent." (Reese)

Reese, who got off from the ship following Fia, had grown slightly taller than before, and the air around her was slightly matured.

She felt a bit cold when she tasted the climate of the Hypne Continent. That was because she was wearing thin clothing at present because it was warmed until we approached this continent.

By the way, the temperature of the Hypne Continent was lower than the other continents, and it seemed impossible to move during winter especially in Snowflake Moon phase due to heavy snowfall.

But, the Snowflake Moon phase was still several months away, so we would be fine for a while.

“It’s certainly cold, but I’m still fine!” (Reus)

“It’s pointless to compare yourself with Reese, you know.” (Emilia)

The next ones who appeared from behind Reese were Reus with short sleeved shirt and Emilia who had an astonished expression. She, then, handed a coat to Reese.

Emilia grew further after one year. She became a fine adult woman who display the dignity of an attendant... except on some parts.

And Reus was probably had the most growth among us. He had grown up to the extent that I couldn’t match his eyes unless I looked up. However, the natural airhead didn’t really changed at all.

“Instead of feeling cold, wear something. Especially you, Reus. You should wear a coat before your body become cold.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

And then, Hokuto came down from the ship while pulling the carriage, and our team was finally completed.

I also had grown up. Thanks to my body that became bigger, I was less seen as a child.

Last but not least, Hokuto also became slightly bigger.

By the way... Until what extent would the Hundred Wolves grow?

At present, he was considerably big, but it was really lucky because he was a species that didn’t need to eat food. Even though there were two gluttons who ate too much, the food expenses never became a burden,

After moving to a place that didn’t interfere with the traffic, Emilia came up and rolled

a muffler around me while I was vaguely looking at the horizon.

“Did you see anything by looking at the sea?” (Emilia)

“...I was thinking that I had come a long way. Don’t you feel cold, Emilia?” (Sirius)

“The Silver Wolfkin is strong against cold. If it is this much, we will be fine. More importantly, how about you, Sirius-sama? If you feel cold, I will warm you up.” (Emilia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Actually, I felt a bit cold, but even though I wasn’t asking for this, a person and an animal came to me, and I felt warm.

As we left the port while gathering attention from the surroundings which was mainly focused on Hokuto, we were heading to a town to find information and clothing that protect against cold.



Here was a large port town because it was the gateway to the Hypne Continent. The culture and manners were mixed with the availability of goods and people from other continents. I would say that there were few goods unique to this continent.

We casually wondered around the town, and after finding an inn before the sun set, we gathered in a room to have discussion.

“Well... we finally arrived at the Hypne Continent, but there is one problem.” (sirius)

“Yes. It is a serious problem for us.” (Emilia)

The problem was... the money.

We went on a journey while earning income from requests of the adventurer guild in same way like other adventurers. However, the fare for the regular ship to go to this continent was higher than expected.

We would be fine for a while, but it was about time to think about earning income earnestly. I didn’t want to hold back on food expenses due to short of money, and that would make the disciples sad.

Well, this wasn't the first time we ran out of money. There was an adventurer guild in this town, so it should be fine to earn there, but...

"Yeah, I don't want the side dishes to decrease, so I will earn plenty!" (Reus)

"But... the number of requests is obviously few." (Emilia)

I had a peek at the adventurer's guild before we stayed at the inn, but far from being obviously less requests, there were only few requests suitable for us.

Since there were many adventurers wanted to earn money as we do, it seemed that it would be processed immediately when the request came out.

"What left are time consuming requests and requests that only involves labor." (Fia)

"I wish that there is a request to beat huge monster. If I go with Aniki, we can finish it soon and make a lot of money." (Reus)

"This is a suggestion. How about stopping earning in this town?" (Fia)

We had ascertain the situation while collecting information about the continent, and there seemed to be a big town where most of the inhabitants were beastkin in a place somewhat away from here.

The name of the town was... Arbitray. It was also known as the country of beastkins.

The king was called as the Beast King ruler. It seemed that the town was as big as Elysion where we had stayed for a while. It seemed that there were many requests from the guild if it was a big place, and it seemed that there were various rare requests.

As everyone was listening to that information, it seemed that the disciples understood my intention.

"In other words, we are going there for sightseeing while making money?" (Emilia)

"Just as you said. According to the rumor, the public order seems not bad. Whatever it is, I plan to go there." (Sirius)

"The town of Beastkin, is it?... I may see Silver Wolfkins like me!" (Reus)

“I was also concerned when I heard it, but I have no reason to refuse.” (Reese)

“I will follow Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

In that way, our next course of action was decided. After collecting information on the continent for several days, we left for Arbitray.

We were surprised by the monsters and their unique attacking methods that we saw first time on the road, but we could walk around without problems due to the information heard in advance.

When night came, the temperature went down and the camping was severe, but with thick clothing that we bought in the town and Hokuto who came close, we never had problem with cold.

Yes, the journey was going well, but... there was a problem occurred at the end.

We had forgotten about this since it was recently became daily occurrence to us and we thought of it every day.

That was the existence of Hokuto and how much he affected the surroundings...



We finally arrived at Arbitray several days after leaving the port town.

It was a big town based on the information given and the protective wall surrounding the whole town was on par with the one that surrounded the Elysion.

We rode the carriage until the front of a big gate of the protective wall, and then, I headed to the gatekeeper who examined people going into the town...

“That is... Hundred Wolves-sama!?” (Gatekeeper 1)

“It is the Hundred Wolves-sama!” (Gatekeeper 2)

Rather than us, the gatekeepers were making a fuss when seeing Hokuto.

Although there was no need to explain at this time, the gatekeepers were beastkins.

“Wait a sec! Why the Hundred Wolves-sama is pulling a carriage!?” (Gatekeeper 1)

“Bastard! Why are you making the Hundred Wolves-sama like a horse!?” (Gatekeeper 2)

It would be fine if they only praised Hokuto, but it was a bad luck considering that the gatekeepers were Wolfkin who most susceptible to Hokuto’s influence.

Hokuto pulled our carriage voluntarily, but for those beastkins who met him for the first time, they would think that I was exploiting a Hundred Wolves which was the angel of God.

“Look! Not only that Elf, our brethren also are wearing collars!” (Gatekeeper 1)

“Human! You got some nerves to make our brethren as slaves!” (Gatekeeper 2)

Furthermore, the siblings and Fia who wore a choker were suspected to be as slaves. Although the gatekeepers didn’t pointed their weapons, they released bloodlust at me.

I forgot to take this danger into consideration because I was used to the scene where Hokuto was worshiped and prayed at the towns that we had been going to. Well, someone asked to pull the carriage. But, that was another story.

“Uhhh, Sirius-san.” (Reese)

“It’s going to get more complicated, so Reese can remain hidden.” (Sirius)

After telling the other human inside the carriage which was Reese to remain alert, I got off the coachman seat. I slowly walked in front of the gate to solve the misunderstanding.

“It seems that there is a misunderstanding. Therefore, I’m going to explain, alright? Yes, these three are wearing it, but they are not my slaves.” (Sirius)

“Then, what is that collar!? Release our brethren!” (Gatekeeper 1)

“It would be better if you see it yourselves. You guys, take off your choker at once.” (Sirius)

“Well, it can’t be helped then.” (Fia)

“I don’t really want to remove it, but...” (Reus)

If that was a slave collar used for slavery, they wouldn’t be able to remove it themselves. Hence, it would be the evidence that they were not my slaves.

Reus and Fia had removed their choker in response to my words, but... only Emilia was unusually reluctant.

“I am like Sirius-sama’s slave, and I don’t mind if I’m viewed as your slave in the first place.” (Emilia)

“I am happy that you think until that extent, but... I want you to remove it now.” (Sirius)

“...Understood.” (Emilia)

Emilia let out a sigh from the heart as she removed the choker. The gatekeepers were surprised, but they still stared at me.

Hokuto also did the same. It might be seen as a problem to treat a Hundred Wolves like an underling, but I wanted them to understand that Hokuto was pulling the carriage at his own will.

This should be explained by Hokuto, but zealous believers often made a convenient interpretation, so it was highly likely that even those who were in front of us would not admit even if Hokuto explained it to them. Strictly speaking, there was such a situation in the past.

Should I try to change their mindset?

It was a hobby of Hokuto to pull the carriage, and we were the attendants for taking care Hokuto... in other words, would they think that we were lower existences compared to him?

So, when I tried to kneel to Hokuto...

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

...Not good.

Hokuto rubbed his face against my chest until I couldn’t see the ground under me.

As I was thinking of another plan, Hokuto lightly barked at the gatekeepers.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“...I see, is that so!?” (Gatekeeper 1)

“Woof... Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Hundred Wolves-sama’s beautiful fur is maintained by the hands of this man? I see... it is certainly reasonable for Hundred Wolves-sama to take him under your arm!” (Gatekeeper 2)

...It seemed that they conveniently misunderstood me.

According to Reus’ translation, Hokuto told that I was an important existence that took care his fur every day, but it seemed that the gatekeepers thought that I was an attendant specializing in grooming Hokuto’s fur. It couldn’t be said as a mistake because I was indeed brushing him every day.

And then, my disciples were also thought to be Hokuto’s caretakers. Moreover, they interpreted that he was pulling the carriage in order to bring those who took care of him.

Since the bloodlust from the gatekeepers had disappeared, I guessed it was all ended well.

As the misunderstanding had been solved, we finally started to enter the town, but...

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Yes, there is no problem to bring people who are acknowledged by Hundred Wolves-sama. Please come in!” (Gatekeeper 1)

“Woof?” (Hokuto)

“Yes, if it’s an accommodation, there is an inn called [Wolf King] that is a bit off the central district of the town. It is the largest inn in the town, so Hundred Wolves-sama will be able to take a good rest there!” (Gatekeeper 2)

With an authoritative-sounded bark, they were not only overlooking us, but we also

obtained information on recommended lodging.

Both Hokuto and the gatekeepers were excellent indeed.

But, was that really alright as gatekeepers of Arbitray?

I wasn't sure why would I worry about the town which I hadn't entered yet...



After going through troubles at the gate, we finally entered Arbitray.

The area nearby the protective wall was probably a farming area as a field of growing crops spread around. After riding the carriage for a while, we finally saw the town

From the carriage, we curiously looked at the town that full of vibrancy where houses of various sizes stood out.

“Ooh... they are really beastkins.” (Reus)

“This is called a country of beastkin after all.” (Emilia)

“It is also a pleasure of traveling to see such refreshing scenery.” (Fia)

Starting with the siblings of Wolfkin, there were Catkin, Rabbitkin, Foxkin, and... variety of beastkin calmly walked in the town.

Apparently, 90% of them were beastkin, and the remaining 10% were human and others.

“Not just Hokuto, human like me and Sirius-san are rarely seen.” (Reese)

“I can't feel any suspicious look for now, but Reese and Fia shouldn't go out alone if possible.” (Sirius)

Since this was a big town, it wasn't weird if there were beastkin who had bad thoughts. Well, there was no need to worry of being attacked when Hokuto was here with us.

Now, the reaction of the beastkin who were walking around the town was either avoiding the way as much as to give way and lowered their hand or pray with their hands together when they saw Hokuto.

This kind of thing happened many times in the town we had been traveling, but it was a troubling response when it was up to this scale.

Moreover, since the carriage was a carriage pulled by a Hundred Wolves, it seemed that some beastkins started to think that he carried either royalties or important people. Even if we headed toward the castle in Arbitray as it was, there was no feeling of discomfort at all.

Since I didn't intend to engage with the royalties, I would like to find our destination as soon as possible and parked the carriage.

"Right now, this is due to Hokuto-san's prestige, but it would probably happen like this if Sirius-sama walks alone." (Emilia)

"No, it's different, Nee-chan. This is because Aniki is together with Hokuto-san, and this is also Aniki's ability." (Reus)

"I see, you said good things, Reus!" (Emilia)

I really wanted to arrive at the accommodation as soon as possible before the sibling's conversation starting to drift away...



"We are extremely honored to have Hundred Wolves-sama to stay at our inn!" (??)

We finally found the [Wolf King] inn recommended by the gatekeepers in the evening, and as the name implied, the manager was a Wolfkin.

In a way, Hokuto was a Beast Companion, but since he was a Hundred Wolves, he was casually guided into the inn by a hospitable manager who came out from the inside.

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"Yes, your name is Hokuto-sama, is it? Then, Hokuto-sama, I will guide you to the most exclusive room in our inn..." (Manager)

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

"Eh... do you want to be in the same room as those who are with you? But... I got it. If

Hokuto-sama said so..." (Manager)

Since Hokuto complained if he didn't get to be in the same room with me, the manager immediately changed his thought and turned a smile on us.

"Everyone here is Hokuto-sama's companions, right? In that case, you all get to be in our most exclusive room..." (Manager)

"I'm sorry, but I don't have much money, so please give us an ordinary room." (Sirius)

"How can we let that be!? If it is known that the Hundred Wolves-sama stays in an ordinary room, we will be put in shame for the rest of our lives!" (Manager)

The grownup manager had teary eyes, but I could understand his feeling.

He made a squishing face for having a great existence, the so-called Hokuto who was like a royalty, to be in an appropriate room.

The manager called us as if he was pleading, but such a lodging like this [Wolf King] looked pretty luxurious and it seemed that the price should be pretty high.

In that case, should we just have the cheapest room, while Hokuto have the most exclusive room?

Hokuto seemed not to be convinced, but somehow he needed to put up with them. Well, whatever it would be, I had a feeling that he would be coming to my room.

"We don't mind if everyone's accommodation is at the cheapest price!" (Manager)

"Then, we'll take the exclusive room." (Sirius)

I made that prompt decision.

We traveled a lot and camped outside many times, so I would like to stay at a good place when we get to town.



And then, we were not guided to a room, but a remote building in the compound of [Wolf King].

“This is the best room in our inn. I think that this is the most appropriate room for Hokuto-sama and everyone.” (Manager)

It was a slightly bigger building than the place where I was born. It was like a small villa.

It seemed that it would be used for royalties or high rank nobles in travel, but this time, it was fine for us to use it as a separate lodging.

“When the meal time comes, a chef will come to make it for you. And if you pour mana on the magic tool at the entrance, the doorbell of the residence will ring, so please do not hesitate to call us if there is anything.” (Manager)

In addition to that, apparently it didn’t matter if we use ingredients and drinks in the residence as we pleased. After the manager finished explaining variously, he bowed and left us.

Although there were little stocks, we had to look up every corner of the residence while feeling excited about being able to stay in this kind of lodging.

When we stayed at an inn in a town, we didn’t only confirm an escape route, but we also did a preliminary check up to see whether something like a trap had been set up.

“Will it be alright to use the whole building? This is great and it feels luxurious!” (Reus)

“Since the number of rooms is enough, there is no problem if you use one room by yourself.” (Sirius)

“I also checked the kitchen, and the ingredients were perfect.” (Emilia)

“Although it is narrow, I found a wine cellar in the basement as well.” (Reese)

“Oh my, you did find something good. Let’s drink together later!” (Fia)

We couldn’t find anything particularly dangerous, so we sat on the sofa in the living room and took a rest.

“Sirius-sama, let’s slowly take a rest today.” (Emilia)

“Aah, this is thanks to you, Hokuto. I will brush you plenty today.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Gufuhh!? I-I understand that you are happy, but it’s too much.” (Sirius)

While stroking Hokuto who jumped into my chest with the momentum of his whole body, the siblings were quietly standing behind me.

““...”” (Emilia/Reus)

“...I will do it for you too, so don’t look at me with such eyes.” (Sirius)

“Yes!” (Emilia)

“Ouu!” (Reus)

The siblings reply with brush in hand while wagging the tail.

Today... it was going to be another long day before I could go to sleep.



The second day after arriving at Arbitray.

We got up a bit late because of the tiredness of the journey. When we was preparing to go out to explore the town...

{It is difficult for us to say this, but I would like Hokuto-sama from going out today... }
(Manager)

That was coming from the manager who came to the secondary residence this morning.

When I asked the detail, there were some beastkins who were unable to see Hokuto yesterday, were searching for him. It seemed that they were planning to give offerings. The area around here was the same as the time of the village where the Silver Wolfkin lived.

But here was a city where many people gathered.

Since there was a high possibility that confusion would occur around the [Wolf King] inn, we would cooperate with those who manage the surroundings on how to deal

with the matter of Hokuto. It seemed there were trying to control the information of our relationship.

For this purpose, Hokuto shouldn't go out for about a day or two.

{In some cases, could you give me an opportunity to show Hokuto-sama to everyone?}
(??)

Since we were staying at low cost, if it didn't hold us back too much... well it seemed Hokuto nodded to allow this.

However, I thought that it was impossible to leave Hokuto behind, and this was clearly suggested by the disciples.

{You see, Sirius. If that's the case, how about you stay in the inn?} (Fia)

{That's right! Aniki can slowly take a rest.} (Reus)

{Well, recently there are various things going and you are tired, right? You can entrust us to earn money.} (Reese)

{Sirius-sama can just ask us to do the errand, and even if we will get tired, it's not really a punishment.} (Emilia)

{Hei, I don't want to get punished, you know!} (Reus)

Last night, I didn't only brush Hokuto, but I also brushed the sibling's tail. In addition, I combed the hair of Reese and Fia. Actually, I was pretty tired.

I certainly wanted to go sightseeing the town, but once in a while, it might be good to leave it to the disciples.

Hence, I decided to take a break and remained with Hokuto in the secondary residence.

Now... what should I do?

I was always busy with the disciples' training, so... I was quite lost of what to do when I had a day off.

It was good to play with Hokuto, but since I needed to use stamina if I played with the

present Hokuto, I felt like I wasn't taking a break.

Besides, it seemed that he was satisfied even just staying by my side since I brushed him attentively last night.

While sitting on the sofa, I thought about how to spend the day while stroking the sleeping Hokuto.



"...Yeah. I got a good soup stock." (Sirius)

Eventually... I decided to cook.

When I thought about it, I felt that I hadn't made elaborate dishes recently. So today, I thought about making a cream stew that took a lot of time.

"It tastes the best when it is cold. I will make plenty of them and they will be pleased when they return." (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

After that, I kept stirring until the meat melt... and suddenly I noticed something.

I was in a situation where I was waiting alone for their return while cooking when everyone was making money outside.

Right now, I was completely like stay-at-home husband or mother huh...

"No, no, that's wrong. I am only cooking because this is my hobby. I am not their mother. Right, Hokuto?" (Sirius)

"...Woof." (Hokuto)

"Do not look away, Hokuto! Goodness... Hmm!? Since everyone eats a lot, I have to be careful not to put too much salt." (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

Although I somehow felt like pressing the matter on Hokuto, I decided not to dwell on

it because I wanted to focus on adjusting the seasoning.

After that, when I was cooking other dishes, I felt a presence outside the house, so I stopped cutting vegetables.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

However, Hokuto who was lying nearby stood up and went out of the kitchen. It seemed that he went to see the outside.

It felt strange for the employees of the inn, and there was no sign of hiding like a bandit at all. Since there was no bloodlust and suspicious feeling, was it a beastkin who came to see Hokuto?

Well, whatever it was, if Hokuto went out, there should be no problem.

And when I resumed cooking and put cut vegetables in a pot...

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Kya!?” (??)

When I thought of Hokuto’s bark from outside, an unfamiliar voice began to sound at the same time.

There seemed to be no danger, so just to be sure, I stopped cooking and removed the pan from the fire...

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“...What did you pick up?” (Sirius)

Hokuto... came back while holding the neck of a girl with ears and a tail that seems to be a tiger.



Archerion

The bow that Fia got from Shishou.

Although it was abnormal when it came out from Shishou's body, it received the feelings put in Asha's string, and it had its own will.

The reason why Sirius was shot in the main story was the result of that confirmed the mischievous mind of Shishou and the jealous of Asha.

Since the bow loved its owner, Fia, it was basically faithful and had a capable personality.

Especially the offensive ability.

In the future, when Asha joined Fia, there would be a joke material about the fight between Asha and that bow, but... that time was forgotten.



Extra/Bonus

Reason why Sirius so tired.

In the night they stayed at the separate residence of [Wolf King], after finished brushing the disciples...

"It's a bit cold. Can you bring blanket from the carriage?" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"...It is true that I feel warm if you get on me, but you're a bit heavy. I will only accept your feelings." (Sirius)

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

“Well then, Sirius-sama, I will warm you up with my skin.” (Emilia)

“Go back to your room.” (Sirius)

“That’s right! Today is my turn!” (Fia)

“No! This is an act of warming up Sirius-sama!” (Emilia)

“...I’m not going to bed yet, you know.” (Sirius)

Chapter 119

The Inverse Order

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“...What did you pick up?” (Sirius)

Hokuto held a beastkin child who had a tiger’s ears and tail in his mouth and brought her in. Looking at her appearance, she was about eight years old.

It was a cute girl with tied up blond hair that extended to her shoulders. Since there were noticeable leaves and dirt on her fine quality and easy-to-move clothes, she looked like a rascal.

Nevertheless... she seemed matured even though her nape was caught by Hokuto.

It was a funny sight as if a parent cat carried a kitten on the nape and carried it away, but I wouldn’t watch it forever.

“Who are you?” (Sirius)

“...” (??)

The girl just diverted her gaze to the back when I asked that question. It was a feeling of doing something mischievous and desperately trying to dodge questions. This was exactly a behavior common in Reus and Noel.

There seemed to be no danger because she didn’t have anything like weapons, but the fact that Hokuto caught her was probably because of her suspicious movements.

As I was thinking to at least ask her what she had been doing... a sound of a stomach ringing suddenly sounded.

“...Would you like to eat stew?” (Sirius)

“!?” (??)

The ears and the tail stood up like a 'Ping' sound, but she shook her head immediately and covered her ears with hands so that she couldn't hear it.

The appearance that was trying to endure with utmost effort was cute for her age, but it was troubling if she wasn't going to talk at all.

After looking at the situation, I asked Hokuto to release her for the time being, and rather than running away, the liberated girl displayed her courage by sitting on a nearby chair.

I sat in front of her and tried to ask her again, but suddenly, I felt something wrong with the girl.

"...So what did you come here for?" (Sirius)

"...It's for Hundred Wolves-sama." (??)

"Woof?" (Hokuto)

"I came to see Hundred Wolves-sama. So, Onii-san has nothing to do with this." (??)

"You finally start talking." (Sirius)

The girl made a distorted mouth, and told that she wouldn't talk to me.

"It is true that you don't need to explain, but unfortunately, Hokuto is my partner and my Beast Companion." (Sirius)

"That's a lie! Hundred Wolves-sama is an angel of God. It is absolutely impossible for him to be a Beast Companion for a human!" (Sirius)

"Even if you told me that... huh?" (Sirius)

"Woof?" (Hokuto)

"...Eh?" (??)

The girl opened her mouth wide as if she had shocked and she became hardened when looking at me and Hokuto tilted our head while facing each other.

I also felt bad because I was like destroying her dream, but it was already irreparable as I stroked Hokuto's head since he was being spoiled.

Furthermore, it seemed that she couldn't understand Hokuto's words from the reaction of the girl. As expected, people wouldn't be able to understand it unless they were Wolfkin or Dogkin.

"Well, now that you have seen Hundred Wolves-sama... I mean Hokuto, what are you going to do from now on?" (Sirius)

"...I want to touch Hundred Wolves-sama!" (??)

I wasn't sure whether the girl stopped thinking about it, but she stretched out to reach Hokuto after remembering the purpose, but Hokuto twisted his body to avoid her.

"...Eh?" (??)

"...Woof." (Hokuto)

"Ei! Why... don't avoid it!" (??)

"Don't you think that he will let a child who doesn't give her greeting and even tell her name to touch him? As for touching him without permission, that is considered rude no matter who you are." (Sirius)

"Eh!?" (??)

She was probably convinced since she stopped for a short time, and then, she slowly bowed. Nevertheless, it was a splendid bow from such a rascal.

"Uhhh... Nice to meet you, my name is Mea. Hundred Wolves-sama, will you let me touch you?" (Mea)

"Woof." (Hokuto)

"Yes, you can." (Sirius)

While extending his forefoot, Hokuto barked as if she could touch as much as she want, and the girl named Mea touched it with glittering eyes.

“Waahh... It’s fluffy!” (Mea)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“It seems that you still have something to ask since you are still here.” (Sirius)

“Well... will it be alright to hug him?” (Mea)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

From Mea’s appearance who was in high spirits while hugging Hokuto, it seemed that she came only to see him.

Although she was a trespasser, it was pitiful to view her as a bad person since she was still a child.

‘Let’s assume that there is no danger, and let her do what she wants.’

Besides, she might be a girl with a high status because she was able to trespass this kind of place and she was wearing a fine-looking cloth.

When I tried to resume cooking by leaving her to Hokuto, I remembered that her belly was grumbling.

It would be more delicious if I let the stew cooled and warmed it again, but it was already completed as a stew.

“May I call you... Mea-chan? Although you said nothing earlier, I can prepare the stew if you want to eat it.” (Sirius)

“...” (Mea)

Mea was riding Hokuto, but she became silent again because of those words.

Perhaps, she was very cautious to people.

...When I thought about it, I hadn’t eaten lunch because I tasted the stew several times in the middle of cooking.

For that reason, I thought about eating a little, so I prepared the stew and put it on the

table...

“...” (Mea)

“...Do you want to eat it?” (Sirius)

“!?” (Mea)

Without she realized it, she came close and sat in front of me. She seemed interested when looking at the stew.

Hmm... was it due to befitting upbringing or was there a reason why she didn't want to eat it?

When I tried to lift up to the spoon to eat the stew...

“...Hokuto. Please invite ‘that’ graciously.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

After a while Hokuto left the front door according to my instruction, a violent noise began to resound from the outside.

As Mea was extremely shaken with that noise, Hokuto returned while biting the nape of a female beastkin who had ear like a squirrel.

“This feeling... is that you Grethe?” (Mea)

“...I'm sorry. I got caught...” (Grethe)

The Squirrelkin who was released by Hokuto, was a woman around twenty years old with a sensual body that would tempt males.

She seemed to have sleepy eyes and her spirit couldn't be noticed, but she lifted her arms as if to say she gave up after having a little fight against Hokuto. In addition... I somehow felt a nostalgic feeling from that woman.

Mea, who noticed that she was being carried, ran to her while screaming her name as she touched her.

“Are you alright? I heard a loud noise...” (Mea)

“I’m fine. Hundred Wolves-sama is very strong. I was completely held down without able to resist.” (Grethe)

“You two seem know each other.” (Sirius)

“...Right. My name is Grethe. I am Mea-sama’s escort.” (Grethe)

Indeed, she had an escort. As I expected, this girl seemed to be a noble with a certain status.

Although she had a slightly peculiar tone, the woman called Grethe gave a proper reply. It seemed that there would be no problem to hold conversations.

By the way, I offered them to have a seat and sat directly in front of them. I asked for an explanation of the situation while changing the tone suited for a noble.

“Anyhow, why Mea-sama and her escort are here?” (Sirius)

“Mea-sama said she wanted to see the Hundred Wolves who has become a rumor since yesterday. Although I said that it was no good, Mea-sama left on her own.” (Grethe)

“I wanted to see him!” (Mea)

“And when I thought that I finally found Mea-sama, I was held down by the Hundred Wolves-sama.” (Grethe)

“How should I say it... well, sorry about that.” (Sirius)

“...It’s alright. To begin with, it is bad for Mea-sama to be missing.” (Grethe)

“That is... uhmm, I’m sorry.” (Mea)

Instead of the relationship between a master and an attendant, these two acted like sisters. There was no doubt that they trusted each other.

For the time being, Mea’s goal to touch Hokuto had been achieve, but not only Grethe’s line of sight directed to the stew placed on the table, a grumbling sound of belly similar to Mea’s resounded.

“...Do you want to eat?” (Sirius)

“Is it alright?” (Grethe)

“If only a little. More importantly, I invited Mea-sama, but she didn’t eat it. Is there something wrong?” (Sirius)

“Mea-sama won’t eat it unless it is poison tasted.” (Grethe)

“...Is that so?” (Sirius)

When I thought about it, it was a simple reason, but she was unusually stubborn.

They probably could have meals if they went back home, but the appearance of enduring the stew reminded me about the siblings in the past. There was no way I could ignore it.

“I don’t really like to make a child feel hungry. So, both of you can eat it.” (Sirius)

“Alright... I’ll eat.” (Grethe)

Unlike Mea, she began to eat without hesitation.

She was certainly in a state of putting all of her heart, and I was glad that she was engrossed until that much. Anyhow, I was confident about my meal this time.

And then, Grethe finished eating in no time. She closed her eyes and was immersed the aftertaste.

“Uhm... I’m satisfied.” (Grethe)

“Grethe! Why are you eating everything!?” (Mea)

“For caution’s sake, I was poison tasting until the end. Yup, there was no poison.” (Grethe)

“Wuu... It looked tasty... although I had to endure it...” (Mea)

“There is still some more, so don’t fight.” (Sirius)

Mea, who had teary eyes, gave a spoiled-child punch, but it seemed that there was no effect for Grethe who was satisfied with the stew.

First off, as I poured the stew into the empty dish before Mea was really going to cry, she reached out the dish with a smile...

“Hot!?” (Mea)

“Here you go... and the spoon too.” (Grethe)

Mea put a finger in the stew and it was hot to the point her finger was getting burned.

When I look at the sight of Mea receiving the spoon from Grethe, I noticed the sense of incongruity that could be felt from Mea.

“...The meat is very tender!” (Mea)

“It can be softer, but it seems good enough.” (Sirius)

Well... they were still engrossed with it. So, I would ask them after that.

In the meantime, I prepared the plate that got emptied after they finished the stew.



After finishing another helping, Mea was satisfied with her ears moving a little. It seemed like the siblings' tail as she was a child who expressed her emotion with the ears.

At the same time, maybe due to the 'success' of the stew, her heart began open a bit, and she told me to use the usual tone as well.

“It's delicious!” (Mea)

“Aah, hold on.” (Grethe)

Grethe released [Wind] at Mea who was feeling a bit hotter after eating the stew.

Since the meal and their business were over, they would only need to return home, but since Hokuto touched my shoulder with the forefoot and was appealing, I decided

to step in a bit.

“Say, Mea-chan. I have something I’d like to ask... is it alright?” (Sirius)

“Hmm, what is it?” (Mea)

“Could it be that Mea-chan is blind?” (Sirius)

It was a feeling out of place that I felt since I met her.

Starting from the eyeball and pupil movement, putting the finger into the stew, and the movement to take the spoon handed over were all strange.

I thought that it was rude to ask such a thing soon after seeing me, but even though I shouldn’t get involved, I still asked her because I became concerned due to various things.

In the worst case, I was also prepared to be scold, but after thinking for a while, Mea frankly nodded.

“Yes. That’s right.” (Mea)

“...Mea-sama, is it fine to tell that?” (Grethe)

“Onii-san is kind, and it is fine since he is also Hundred Wolves-sama’s partner.” (Mea)

“I’m happy that you trust me. I will ask this next. Can you tell me how much you can’t see?” (Sirius)

“Well, it is almost impossible to see Onii-san from here, I think?” (Mea)

Apparently, she wasn’t completely blind.

However, even at a distance that she could reach with her hands, the eyesight seemed bad enough to distinguish the overall shape and the approximate color.

“So you came here in such a state, is it?” (Sirius)

“It’s alright because my nose and ears are good!” (Mea)

“For me, that’s not alright at all. I am worried so much that made me feel myself in trouble.” (Grethe)

“Thi-this time is fine, isn’t it!? I also met Hundred Wolves-sama. Plus, I get to eat the stew!” (Mea)

“Yes... To be honest, that is good. Occasionally, there are good things like this.” (Grethe)

I took my eyes away from those two who were in agreement. Then, I looked at Hokuto once and we both nodded.

At that time... I heard that Mea who was hugging Hokuto had muttered something.

{Hundred Wolves-sama... please cure my eyes.} (Mea)

Yesterday, I confirmed from the conversation of the beastkin who made a racket because of Hokuto. It seemed that there was a rumor in this town about people’s wish would come true if they touched Hundred Wolves.

It was probably a kind of so-called urban legend.

The beastkin basically didn’t touched the Hundred Wolves maybe because they were revering it, but there was a scene of an innocent child appeared out of nowhere and touched him, the adults became flustered and stopped the child.

Maybe it was also due to the Hundred Wolves’ mystique, even if they wanted to touch him, the rumor said not to touch him, and it might changed as time went on. Well, rumors were that kind of thing.

The thing that Hokuto appealed earlier was as if he was asking... if I could do something about it. He was unsparing to the enemies and associates like the sibling, but he was pretty gentle to kids.

Well... I wasn’t sure if I could completely cure it, but I probably could manage to some extent.

Since she wasn't completely blind and she still could see vaguely, there was a way to do it.

"If it's just Mea-chan's eye, maybe, you can see well." (Sirius)

"Really!?" (Mea)

"Mea-sama, it's not good to expect too much. You too. Don't say that when you have no grounds." (Grethe)

"I have seen the illness like this from a princess of a certain country. I think that I will know the cause at least." (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"...Please." (Mea)

Of course, it was doubtful, but with Hokuto's bark that supported me, Mea gave a nod.

I had to touch Mea to find the cause, and when I touched her, Grethe started to display disapproval.

"Stop it. That is unacceptable." (Grethe)

"It's alright, Grethe. If he intended to do something, he would already do it." (Mea)

"Even so... If something happened to Mea-sama... I will stop even if I have to stab you..." (Grethe)

Grethe watched every of my movement while unleashing bloodlust. At the same time, I put my hand on Mea's head and the result of [Scan] was...

"...It looks like something had happened. I will explain beforehand. From now on, your eyes will feel and you will feel some pain, I think." (Sirius)

"Does it hurt?" (Mea)

"Yes. I will keep it to the minimum as possible, but tell me if you can't handle it anymore. Well, I'm going to start. Close your eyes until I give you a signal." (Sirius)

“Understood!” (Mea)

After confirming that her eyes were closed, I flowed mana gradually into her body and made Mea [Boost] activated.

Since I activated [Boost] many times in order to teach it to the disciples, even if they felt hot and pain, there was no after effect like getting sluggish.

“...What is this? Like Onii-san said before, the eyes feel hot, and... it feels a bit tingling.” (Mea)

“I wonder if it’s alright now? Slowly open your eyes and look around.” (Sirius)

“Aah... I can see... I can see!” (Mea)

[Boost] was a magic that strengthened the body. If it was specifically activated on the eyes, it could enhance the eyesight. It made people to see things at a distant without a binocular.

In other words, I strengthened the eyesight and increase its value from negative to its usual value. Although that wouldn’t make her to see things in a distant, it would be visible enough to the extent that interfering with everyday life wouldn’t happen.

“Really? Mea-sama, how many of my fingers are?” (Grethe)

“Three... No, I can see that your fingers have increased to four. Yeay, I’m cured!” (Mea)

“No, you are not. It means that...” (Sirius)

“Not cured... eh!?” (Mea)

When I stopped the mana, of course, the [Boost] was also stopped, and her eyesight returned to the original condition.

I let mana flow into Mea who was confused, and I continued to explain in a state where she could see again.

“You know what is Mana right? Right now I am putting my mana on you to improve your eyes. So, if Mea-chan can handle mana, even if I am not there, you will be able to see just like now.” (Sirius)

“But I have never used magic before, you know? And it’s hard to study magic...” (Mea)

“It is not good to give up because it is difficult. You have to try everything. If not, it’s not good.” (Sirius)

“Yes. Of course, you need to work hard.” (Grethe)

“Grethe also...” (Mea)

To tell the truth, there was a method of doing surgery with [String], but there was higher risk because it would deal with delicate nerves. I wouldn’t able to do such an operation without her parent’s permission.

Therefore, I taught how to make up for it with own effort.

Fortunately, Grethe was also being cooperative. It would be just as good as studying on how to handle mana.

“Grethe... will you teach me?” (Mea)

“It is possible to teach you to a certain extent.” (Grethe)

“Onii-san also... will you teach me?” (Mea)

“...I’m sorry. I think that it is impossible because I am an adventurer.” (Sirius)

“Ah, is that so?” (Mea)

It seemed that she understood that as an adventurer, I wouldn’t stay long in this town.

I felt a bit irresponsible, but this was a problem with the sensory. Actually, since she already experienced it, all she needed to do were putting her efforts and perseverance.

“Keep in mind with the current feeling. If you believe you can do it, you will surely be able to do it.” (Sirius)

“...Yes!” (Mea)

And then, in order to let her remember the feeling of [Boost], I let my mana flow into Mea several times.



After Mea and Grethe returned home, I prepared the dinner while explaining the event of today to the disciples when they came back.

Originally, I intended to explain it slowly while eating, but when Emilia returned, she felt the smell of women. It seemed that she noticed the slight smell left by Mea and Grethe. As expected of a wolf...

Since the ladies were making noise asking me whether I brought in prostitutes, I had to explain while preparing the dinner.

"...In that case, when that child remembered roughly the flow of mana, they returned home." (Sirius)

"Is it so? I am sorry for being so loud." (Emilia)

"Uuh... I feel so embarrassed... I'm sorry." (Reese)

"Hey, I am curious about this. Is it easy to learn [Boost] taught by Sirius? I have a hard time to learn it." (Fia)

"That's because Fia knows how to use [Boost] beforehand. Besides, I taught the girl [Boost] that is not on the whole body, but it is only on the eyes. Therefore, it shouldn't be that difficult." (Sirius)

Fortunately, the girl didn't know other [Boost]. After remembering the feeling of the body, a repetitive practice should be enough.

Honestly, I wanted to teach her a bit more in a few days, but far from hoping to see them again, they didn't tell me their true identities to the end. In other words, they must be hiding their identities.

Since I also taught her on a whim, if there was anything over there, I didn't need to be actively involved.

The meal preparation was over as I finished explaining, we started to have the dinner.

Since I had time today, I prepared a variety of dishes other than the stew which had to be cooked thoroughly, and this had become like a small party.

“The usual stew is delicious, but the one today is much more special!” (Reus)

“There is even a special dressing. The salad is delicious!” (Emilia)

“Another please.” (Reese)

“I have made plenty today, so please eat as much as you want. Fia... this one too?” (Sirius)

“Hehe, you noticed that, right? Let’s drink together.” (Fia)

While they reached out for the dishes, Fia and I were drinking the wine brought from the wine cellar in basement.

By the way, even though I usually drank alcohol, I didn’t drink with the siblings and Reese.

Although the dishes were more delicious than drinking, Emilia would act rashly when drinking it, so Reus didn’t know the taste of alcohol well.

Reese was a bit special. For some reason, she didn’t get drunk at all even if she drank. For Reese, alcohol was a kind of juice that had a strange taste. So, she focused more on meals since she couldn’t associate with the taste.

Therefore, it was inevitable that it was only me and Fia who drank it.

After eating the dinner, I had a tea while listening to the situation of the disciples went to the guild, but...

“Hmmm... did you hit some adventurers?” (Sirius)

“Same as always.” (Emilia)

I didn’t need to be bias, but Emilia, Reese and Fia were beautiful women. Hence, there was no end of people trying to get close.

It would be nice if people knew that they were my lovers, but they often invite me for a fight. It was a daily occurrence that I unleashed bloodlust or Reus could beat them and made them fainted.

“If it is Fia-san, that’s normal. However, Emilia was often called out in this town.”
(Reese)

“Well. I am embarrassed when I hear that. So, I completely refused all of their questions.” (Fia)

“I am happy to be yearned for, but I am not interested with a man other than Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

“So, they thought of me as Aniki and invited me for a fight. I had to hit to silence them.”
(Reus)

“Good job, Reus.” (Sirius)

“I only protect Nee-chans, and I have to protect them when Aniki is not there!” (Reus)

As usual, I listened to the situation of the guild while stroking the siblings’ head. Anyhow, it seemed that there were various requests because this was the only big town.

However, this was the first town, so they had been constantly moving since many people were likely to be attracted to Emilia and Fia.

“Since Sirius wasn’t with us today, we only did requests that didn’t require us to go outside the town. Incidentally, we were able to grasp the structure of the town as well.”
(Fia)

“Sirius-sama, this is the earnings today.” (Emilia)

I received a pouch contained with several silver coins and copper coins from Emilia.

It would be enough to earn this much in a day, but that amount was unreliable if we wanted to continue traveling. There were five of us, but our Engel coefficient was higher than the ordinary adventurer parties.

“Aah, I’ll take care of it. Has everyone taken your own share?” (Sirius)

“Yes, we have already taken one silver coin each. The rest are given to Sirius.” (Fia)

“Got it. As usual, tell me if you need something.” (Sirius)

After taking the money, I took out an oversized cake as a desert after dinner, and cut it.

While the disciples made glittering eyes as they indulged the cake, Emilia who finished eating half of her share was thinking of something with a bit serious expression.

“What is it, Emilia? Should I share mine if you don’t have enough?” (Sirius)

“I want you to share it!” (Reus)

“Me too!” (Reese)

By the time I cut the cake for the hungry siblings and put it on a plate, as if the thoughts were the same, Emilia opened his mouth after turning her eyes on me.

“Sirius-sama. I will ask this for the sake of confirmation. The girl who came here was called Mea, right?” (Emilia)

“Do you have any clue of her?” (Sirius)

“Yes. I’m not sure whether this is the truth or not, but I heard it when I was gathering information in the town. The beastkin ruler who govern this town has two children. The daughter’s name is Mary...” (Emilia)

“...Do you mean that girl is that Mary?” (Sirius)

“The age of the beastkin ruler’s daughter is about eight years old. I heard that she is a Tigerkin girl, so whether that is good enough information...” (Emilia)

It was true that she was escorted and I could feel a bit of elegance from Mea.

But, as a princess of a royal family, it was strange that she only had one escort. I wanted to deny that she had sufficient ability to come out in town especially in that state, but... as Emilia said, the likelihood that it was the same person was high.

Well... even if she was the princess herself, she had promised not to talk about me, so there was nothing bad. It probably wouldn’t become a lese majeste.

As Emilia ate the cake to shake off a bad feeling, it seemed that she was happy from the state where her tail was wagging, and I noticed that she continued to look at me.

“Sirius-sama...” (Emilia)

“What is it?” (Reus)

“Please give me a mouthful.” (Emilia)

Since she was waiting with a mouth like a bird, I feed her the cake with a wry smile.



“Sirius-sama, while you’ve been away from early in the morning, I have received something like this earlier.” (Emilia)

Next day... while having breakfast as we got up early in the morning, the manager of [Wolf King] came in with a letter.

It seemed to be a letter from a considerable person from the appearance of the manager’s strainedness and the letter which was luxuriously decorated.

While sensing a bad premonition, I asked the manager who gave the letter...

“It was from one of the aides who serve the beastkin ruler, McDatt-sama.” (Manager)

I felt like holding my head. The content could be something like wanting to meet Hokuto who was a Hundred Wolves.

I read the letter as I had that hope in my heart, but... as I finished reading it, I inadvertently sighed.

“Say Sirius, what was written in it?” (Fia)

“Is Aniki’s splendor reached that far?” (Reus)

“Is there such a thing? Everyone should read it.” (Sirius)

The sender of the letter was McDatt who was also Mary’s teacher, and the girl was the daughter of the beastkin ruler.

In other words, the girl from yesterday was definitely the princess of this country.

Mea promised to treat our meeting as a secret, but she was still a child. If she was questioned, it was inevitable to give the answer...

Nevertheless... I really didn't want to get involved, but why I kept getting involved with royalties and high ranking people? Seriously, it couldn't be helped if I let out a sigh or two.

And when I put together the contents of the letter on the table so that everyone could see... it seemed that he invited me to the castle and wanted to thank you since Princess Mary was taken care of.

"Ooh! As expected of Aniki. Let's get ready at once!" (Reus)

"That's too bad. Apparently, I am the only one who get the invitation. Moreover, it is from a castle. Therefore, it is obvious that I can't invite others." (Sirius)

"But isn't... a bit too sudden today?" (Fia)

"I also want to see the inside of the castle." (Reese)

"If it is from the castle, I must arrange your appearance. Sirius-sama, I will do the preparation immediately." (Emilia)

And then, I wore the mantle embedded with Elysion emblem which was brought by Emilia. As Reus remembered the way of royalties, he waved hand like a flash.

"Hei, Aniki. Even though Aniki is the only one invited, isn't obvious that Hokuto-san also should be invited together?" (Reus)

"That will be good. If it's Sirius-sama, you'll be fine even if something happen, but it feels better if Hokuto-san goes along with you." (Emilia)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"Hmm, it's true that they will allow him in, but if those guys are like the gatekeepers of this town, it's going to be a hassle..." (Sirius)

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

Moreover, according to the manager of the [Wolf King], the information control hadn't

been completed yet. He said that he would like Hokuto to wait for another day before he went out into town.

In addition, it would be a trouble if there was a fight in the castle. Therefore, I would head there alone according to the letter.

“Rather than looking around the town, it is strange to go to the castle first.” (Sirius)

“Please don’t hesitate to call us if there is something. Whether it is a country or a castle, we will break through and find Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

“If it’s me now, I will be able to slice the castle gate!” (Reus)

...Yeah. If something happened to me, the siblings would definitely charged in.

In order to avoid such a thing, I had to deliberately handle the situation in the castle.

“Well then, I’m going.” (Sirius)

“Please take care.” (Emilia)

“““Take care!””” (Reese/Reus/Fia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

In this way, I was sent off by Hokuto and the disciples who were waving hands, and I headed for the Arbitray’s castle.



— Reus —

After sending Aniki off, we remained inside the [Wolf King] without going to the town.

Since Aniki was resting yesterday, he told us to take a rest today.

“It’s been a long time to relax this much...” (Reese)

“Yes, it is. Would you like to have more tea?” (Emilia)

“Yes, please. But, I want wine instead.” (Fia)

“Please don’t drink in the middle of the day. Sirius-sama had made sweets yesterday, so please endure with it.” (Emilia)

“Well, it can’t be helped then. Yeah, it’s not too sweet, so I can eat as much as I want.” (Fia)

“*Nomnom*... it’s delicious.” (Reese)

Nee-chans were relaxing at the table in the courtyard, but since I didn’t feel good unless I moved my body, I was doing a push up slightly away from them.

However, since it was boring to do a normal pushup, I did it with Hokuto-san’s forefoot pushing my back.

“Fuh... fuh... Hokuto-san, it’s fine to be heavier.” (Reus)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Guhh!? Wait a sec... that’s impossible!” (Reus)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Ooh! That’s the guts!” (Reus)

At the moment when I was getting on the mood, Hokuto-san held me down with more strength than expected. Anyhow, Hokuto-san was strict.

And then, the day became noon, and it was time to feel hungry.

When Nee-chan and Reese-ane asked me what I wanted to have for lunch... Since Hokuto-san suddenly stood up and stared at one corner of the courtyard, Nee-chan shouted without a moment delay.

“Enemy attack!? Reus!” (Emilia)

“Ouu!” (Reus)

“Water... please...” (Reese)

“Leave the support to me!” (Fia)

At that time, I was swinging sword, so I was able to take combat posture immediately.

With a bit delayed, Nee-chans were ready for battle, but... fortunately, we didn't have to fight.

It was because the intruder who came from the courtyard tree made a dignified appearance without holding weapons.

“...Please excuse me.” (??)

The opponent had a slightly rounded tail, and it was a tall adult woman.

She was a big breasted woman who was likely to attract men who drank in a bar, but somehow the eyes looked so sleepy.

I couldn't feel bloodlust from her, but there was no doubt that she was an intruder. As I carefully looked at the opponent's movement, Nee-chan who was by my side extended her hand in front of me.

“You... are you Grethe-san?” (Emilia)

“Yes. I am Grethe. Nice to meet you.” (Grethe)

“Nice to meet you too. Leaving that aside, is there anything we can do for you?” (Emilia)

“I have something that I want to tell you. I don't have intention to fight, so please put down your weapons.” (Grethe)

Aniki was right. The way she talked was funny.

It seemed that she didn't want to fight us as stated, so we put down our weapons since Nee-chan withdrew hers.

However, according to Aniki, the other side seemed to be better at erasing presence, so I had to make sure not to be careless.

“So, what do you want to tell us?” (Emilia)

“It is about your master, Sirius.” (Grethe)

“...If it is about Sirius-sama, is he coming back now?” (Emilia)

“Well, I saw him in the castle but he was...” (Grethe)

And then, while we still kept vigilance, shocking words coming out from Grethe’s mouth.

“He was imprisoned in the basement of the castle.” (Grethe)



Extra

The ladies after Mea and Grethe returned home...

“...I smell women! There are two of them!” (Emilia)

“That is... Could it be...!?” (Reese)

“I can’t give up. It’s no good if we don’t have the spirit.” (Fia)

“Yeah! We should make him not to look on other women...” (Reese)

“Oh my, Reese. You are usually mature, but you’re very passionate at such a time.” (Fia)

“Auuu...” (Reese)

Anyhow, Sirius-sama... Take care of me tonight.” (Emilia)

“...” (Sirius)

“Aniki... let’s eat a lot today! You need to save energy!” (Reus)

※I leave it to your imagination of what happen next. (Author)



Presenting Hokuto

That day, Hokuto-kun was in a good mood.

He got plenty of brushing on the night before and today he was the only one remained with the Master.

“Yes, the seasoning should be like this. Next is to boil it...” (Sirius)

It would be good to play with the Master, but since nobody was here, it was enough just to sit next to him while he was cooking.

In this way, he leisurely spent time with the Master alone. In fact, he was used to spend time with Shishou in the previous life.

As he felt nostalgic of the sight that remind him of the past... he felt a presence approaching from outside of the residence.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto felt a boorish presence approaching the mansion, so he went outside in order not to disturb the Master’s work.

And then, as Hokuto-kun approached slowly while hiding his presence, a small girl went into bushes and hid her figure.

No, it couldn’t be say that she was hiding. It was because she was hiding her head, but not her butt.

While being amazed with terrible appearance of stealth, Hokuto gently tapped the suspicious back with his paw.

“Kya!? Wha!?” (Mea)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

The surprised girl jumped out of the bushes, but Hokuto picked her collar with a quick movement and lifted her.

“By any chance... are you Hundred Wolves-sama!?” (Mea)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

Although she was a cute girl, there was no doubt that she was an intruder. Therefore, Hokuto caught his neck and brought her to the Master.



One thing after another happened next, and it turned out that the girl's name was Mea-chan. And then, Hokuto and the Master noticed another presence was approaching the inn.

“...Hokuto. Please invite ‘that’ graciously.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Unlike the previous one, the presence was thin this time. Unlike an ordinary person, it was an expert way of hiding presence.

However... Hokuto-kun's sharpness and nose couldn't be fooled.

Hokuto-kun went around behind the intruder like a gust of wind. He tried to observe from behind whether it was a friend or foe, but...

“Eh!? Enemy!” (Grethe)

While throwing a knife behind without looking back, the intruder jumped high and took a distance.

However, Hokuto-kun started moving as soon as he repelled the knife and he went around behind her at the same time as she landed. It was like an afterimage of a dog.

“-Mugyuuu.” (Grethe)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Before she turned around, he used his paw to hold her back and stopped her movement.

The intruder was struggling for a while, but she gave up since she was completely restrained.

“I am... not tasty.” (Grethe)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun was greatly misunderstood. After that, she didn’t resist being bitten on the nape and Hokuto-kun brought her to the Master.

In this way, Hokuto-kun’s capture play was over.

Chapter 120

The Center of Everything

— Reus —

“He was imprisoned in the basement of the castle.” (Grethe)

We were solidified for a moment without understand the meaning of those words told by Grethe-san who got acquainted with Aniki yesterday.

Wait a sec.

Why... Why Aniki was put in prison?

Aniki was usually polite and the other side was actually the one who did foolish things. Therefore, it shouldn't cause any problem.

Besides, it was strange for that Aniki to be put in prison.

At that time, when I tried to listen to the details while suppressing the anger that swelled up... I noticed my body was trembling.

“...What is it?” (Emilia)

“...Woof?” (Hokuto)

As expected, Nee-chan and Hokuto-san were angry!

Even though I was also angry because it was about Aniki, theirs were to the point of being blurry.

Grethe-san, who was idling, also felt the danger, and she was hiding behind a tree fast.

“Hey, please calm down a bit. It can't be helped even if you are angry with that girl, right?” (Fia)

“Yeah. First off, let’s hear the details... alright?” (Reese)

Fia-ane put her hand on Nee-chan’s head while Reese-ane also was stroking Hokuto-san to calm him down.

“That’s amazing... there is no way I can imitate them.’

“I’m sorry for losing self-control, Grethe-san.” (Emilia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“...It’s alright. I will also get angry if Mea-sama becomes like that.” (Grethe)

“Then... for you to come here from the castle... I mean from the center of the country, I wonder if we can think that you are on our side?” (Fia)

“I am not taking sides. This is my duty, just because Mea-sama is sad.” (Grethe)

“Right, since we don’t have spare time, can you tell us to the extent that you know?” (Fia)

“That’s the plan. It is because I have informed the matter of Sirius to my employer, McDatt-sama, whom I serve from the start.” (Grethe)

Grethe was saying that it was her fault, but we kept listening to the talk now with patience.

“Actually, last night, Mea-sama insisted to practice what had been taught by Sirius, and she collapsed due to mana exhaustion. Because of that, she hasn’t woken up yet.” (Grethe)

“...To collapse because of mana exhaustion, no matter who they are, isn’t a normal thing when you use magic? There are many times that I have to sleep all day because of that. So, Sirius was put into jail just because of that?” (Fia)

“I also said the same thing, but Mea-sama is adored by various people. That was why everyone was terribly worried and it became a fuss in the castle.” (Grethe)

It seemed that Mea worked hard because she wanted to be able to see as soon as possible. If I had to put it badly, Mea overdid it, but I used to do the same thing in the

past.

By the way, I thought that the educator, McDatt, taught Mea on how to use mana since she had grown up a bit.

“So, it became a discussion about who taught Mea who didn’t know magic till yesterday. I was questioned but it was impossible to give different answer. After all, it is my job.” (Grethe)

“I told you, it is weird for Aniki to be put in prison because of that!” (Reus)

“That’s our mistake. Actually, Sirius was called to the castle so that we could ask about the situation, but some people acted rashly and nabbed him from the side.” (Grethe)

Those bunch who worried too much about Mea acted rashly, called Aniki before entering the castle, and took him to the castle’s basement.

The beastkin ruler and the aides seemed unaware of anything because these people were doing things on their own. Rather, they were dissatisfied as Aniki didn’t appear.

“Other than to escort Mea, my job is to inform any injustice from the shadow. Since Sirius doesn’t come in any way of that, I knew that he was imprisoned a while ago and I have reported to McDatt-sama.” (Grethe)

“I’m glad. If that’s the case, Sirius-san is already out of the prison, right?” (Reese)

“...It is probably too soon. Sirius is the reason why Mea-sama collapsed. So, it will take some time for those people who made a fuss to keep him confine for some time.” (Grethe)

As I expected, there were people who said things they wanted, but I couldn’t completely deny that Mea was collapsed. Furthermore, they were still arguing whether to bring out Aniki from the jail to the meeting room.

To make matters worse, the beastkin ruler who suppose to decide about the matter seemed not able to leave the bedside due to Mea’s concern. I guessed that he couldn’t afford to care about Aniki.

Damn... I wonder if there were reasons beyond that, but I could never agree to it!

“...Although he wasn’t aware of it, it looked unsavory for a princess of a country.” (Fia)

“Fia-ane! Aniki was only thinking about that child!” (Reus)

“Yeah, I know that. Sirius didn’t do something bad. However, the princess works way too hard than expected, and this much is about being overprotected by the surrounding.” (Fia)

“Will Sirius-san be alright in the prison?” (Reese)

“Well. First of all, it will be better to check Sirius’ safety and the situation. Sirius... can you hear me? Sirius.” (Fia)

Aah... yes. I forgot that there was a way that we can talk even if we were separated.

The choker that I got from Aniki had a mana stone. If I operated the magic formation drawn on it, I could get in touch with Aniki. I thought the treatment toward Aniki was cruel and that made me completely forgot about the choker. It seemed that Nee-chan was also like me. She forgot about it since she was frustrated.

Fia- ane boldly use the mana stone, but since Aniki’s original magic, [Call], was a magic only known to us. So, people who looked it on the side would see it nothing but the wind magic [Echo].

However, Grethe who was watching the situation stopped her while shaking her head.

“Are you trying to contact him by using [Echo]? I think that the [Echo] will not reach because Sirius is trapped in the basement surrounded by walls that can interfere magic.” (Grethe)

“...Yes, it looks like that.” (Fia)

But... there was no answer from Aniki.

This was really convenient, but it was also a disadvantage because we didn’t know whether our words reached Aniki or not.

Whether our voice didn’t reach or maybe he couldn’t reply.

‘I feel frustrated!’

“Uhhh... Sirius-san is wearing the mantle, right? That is a proof of a messenger of a certain country, but he is still imprisoned even they know it?” (Reese)

“Mantle? That’s something I heard for the first time, but maybe the people in prison are not aware of it. If it is so, then it is a big problem. I wanted to solve the situation as quickly as possible, so I came here to ask Hokuto-san.” (Grethe)

“I see. If it’s Hokuto, he certainly can enter the castle, and it will be the least fuss in that way.” (Fia)

It seemed that either Grette-san told them that Hokuto-san’s master was Aniki or she would rescue him by having Hokuto-san attracted the attention in the case if they weren’t able to get into castle.

‘Alright, if it has been decided, next is to do it.’

“Nee-chan. Let’s go to the castle immediately–... Nee-chan?” (Reus)

Come to think of it... I couldn’t see Hokuto-san and Nee-chan since a little while ago.

I immediately found them when I looked around. Hokuto-san and Nee-chan prepared the carriage and packed our luggage.

“We’re ready, Hokuto-san!” (Emilia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Yes. We’re going that way to rescue Sirius-sama!” (Emilia)

By any chance... were they going to attack the castle!?

They were loading all the luggage on a carriage as if it was a preparation to leave the town as soon as they rescued Aniki.

I rushed toward the carriage and stood in front of Hokuto-san and Nee-chan who were about to go there.

“Hokuto-san, Nee-chan. Wait for me.” (Reus)

“That’s the spirit, Reus. For now, we’re not going to force our way through, so I want

you to stop–...” (Reese)

“If you are forcing through the castle gate, you can leave it to me!” (Reus)

“You got it wrong, you know! Why do you have to say that!?” (Reese)

“That will be as the last resort! First of all, we’re going in peace... Hey, please listen!” (Fia)

“If you don’t stop, I will have to stop you forcefully!” (Reese)

Since Reese-ane and Fia-ane stopped us by using magic, Nee-chan and I became slightly calmed down.

By the way, Hokuto-san completely avoided the magic, but as expected, he also became calm since they were using it.

After that, Grethe-san returned to the castle first. We left the carriage and went to the castle, but...

“...It’s Hundred Wolves-sama.” (??)

“It is the Hundred Wolves-sama!” (??)

“Thank God... Thank God...” (??)

When we went out to the town, Hokuto-san was surrounded by beastkin.

Prior to leaving the hotel, the manager of [Wolf King] stopped us because he hadn’t completed the information control yet, but... I never thought that we gathered this much of attention.

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“You also gathered this much of attention on the first day here, right?” (Reese)

“At that time, the news about Hokuto hadn’t spread wide. Anyhow, it seems that it will take some time to reach the castle.” (Fia)

The gathered beastkin looked at us while stopping in front of us. Our walks stopped

couple of times because they knelt and worshipped him.

They didn't really have any intention to stop us. Since we couldn't force our way through, Nee-chan started to move to the front.

"Please leave this to me." (Emilia)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

As Nee-chan nodded when given full confidence, she used [Echo] after receiving permission from Hokuto-san.

{People of Arbitray... Hundred Wolves-sama... Hokuto-sama is in hurry to go to the castle. With all your help, would you please lead Hokuto-sama to the castle?} (Emilia)

Aniki didn't like to stand out, so we rarely attracted attention. If Nee-chan did something just like now, Aniki would immediately stop her.

However, Aniki wasn't here now, and it seemed that Nee-chan didn't care about such an appearance because she wanted to go to the castle as quickly as possible.

The effect of Nee-chan's announcement was tremendous. The beastkin who were occupying the front weren't only going away, they were arranged neatly and made a way to the castle.

"Well then, let's go, everyone." (Emilia)

"Awoooo!" (Hokuto)

When Hokuto howled as if to say thanks, the beastkin raised their hands and expressed joy. It looked like a parade that celebrated us.

As we walked among them, Reese-ane, who was walking behind us, seemed embarrassed.

"Is that... fine?" (Reese)

"There's nothing we can do since we have come until here. Please be dignified." (Fia)

"...Yeah... you're right. Nevertheless, Fia-san is totally fine with this, right?" (Reese)

“I’m used to the situation that draws attention. Besides... compared to me, they are more amazing.” (Fia)

Reese-ane and Fia-ane were looking at us with bitter smile, but somehow it felt weird.

‘Nee-chan and I are walking on the side while Hokuto-san is leading the way, nothing else, right?’

“It’s too bad Aniki is not here, Nee-chan.” (Reus)

“Yes, I think that it will be a wonderful if Sirius-sama is riding on Hokuto’s back here, but... indeed, it is regrettable.” (Emilia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“As expected, I can’t be dignified like them.” (Fia)

“It would be good if Sirius-san is not angry, but...” (Reese)

“Well, it’s an emergency...” (Fia)

‘Yeah... why is that?’



And then, we came to the castle gate while being sent off by many beastkin. Two beastkin who seemed to be the gatekeepers were puzzled when we stood in front of them.

“Th-that is Hundred Wolves-sama. Why is it coming to the castle?” (??)

“I’m sorry but, I can’t allow you to enter without permission even if you are Hundred Wolves-sama.” (??)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

““Hiiii!?”” (Gatekeepers)

Since they were Catkin and Rabbitkin, they were unable to understand Hokuto-san.

However, they noticed that Hokuto-san's bark was mixed with anger. The two were completely frightened and their tail and ears were hanging. Even so, I thought that they were amazing for trying to protect the gate.

They didn't let us through even when they had dropped their weapons, so Nee-chan went out to the front and bowed to soften the atmosphere.

"Please forgive us for disturbing. I am Emilia. I am serving Hokuto-sama here. If you don't mind, I'd like to translate Hokuto-sama's words. Will that be alright?" (Emilia)

"Ah, yes... please." (??)

"Understood. Well then, this morning... there is a young man of a Human visit here, right?" (Emilia)

"Yes... It's true that he went it, but what is it all about?" (??)

"That young man is very important to Hokuto-sama, but since he heard a bad rumor, he came here to fetch him in a hurry. For that reason, we would like to enter the castle..." (Emilia)

"...What should we do?" (??)

The two were hesitated and looking at each other, but it was unfortunate for them to be hesitated.

When it came to this, I tried to reach my partner while thinking whether I should slice the castle gate, but there was a noise of something being hit hard, so I stopped my hand.

"As you can see, Hokuto-sama is currently in a very bad mood. There is nothing that can stop him from seeing that young man." (Emilia)

When I looked at them, Hokuto-san was hitting the tail on the ground many times to show that he was in a bad mood. The stone pavement was cracking. Was that the noise that I heard just now?

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"Depending on your response, it seems that he is considering to force his way through.

If Hokuto-sama uses his forefoot, the gate that much will be blown away, so... I suggest you to make haste with the decision.” (Emilia)

““Ple-... please wait a moment!”” (??)

They probably imagined the sight. So as the gatekeepers who made a blue face turned, one of them ran toward the castle and went to report.

We went slightly away from the gate and as we waited for the gatekeeper who went away, Reese-ane was wondering about the situation.

“Say, Emilia. Just now, I think that you are really threatening them, right?” (Reese)

“It is one of the negotiation techniques learned from Sirius-sama. Obviously, if the ability difference of each other is known, it is going to be easy to convince them.” (Emilia)

“Anyway, Hokuto-san is really motivated.” (Reus)

The remaining gatekeeper was subjected to silent intimidation released from Hokuto-san. He desperately endured it with teary eyes.

‘Yeah... I understand that fear.’

I also cried how many times because of that.

For us, it was only a bit, but for that gatekeeper, it felt like forever waiting for the other gatekeeper to return...

“...Have I kept you waiting?” (Grethe)

Grethe-san who separated from us in the inn also appeared together.

Although she said that she would save Aniki depending on the situation, why was she here?

“Grethe-san? Why are you here?” (Emilia)

“That’s because the situation has changed. Anyhow, follow me. I will explain while we walk there.” (Grethe)

We were involuntarily surprised, but there was no problem as long as we could get into castle.

As the gatekeeper gave way while invited us in, we followed Grethe-san and went through the castle gate.

Aside from that, Hokuto-san made a small bark at the gatekeeper when he went by the gatekeeper.

It was a gentle bark unlike the previous one. Since the gatekeeper didn't know the meaning and made a wondering look, I told him the meaning.

“You were scared of me, but you carried through your duty and never left the gate. That is an action that you can feel proud.” (Reus)

“...” (??)

When I told him that, the gatekeeper deeply bowed at Hokuto-san.



After that, as mentioned earlier, Grethe-san explained the situation while leading us to the interior of the castle.

“Let me tell you this first, Sirius was taken out of prison.” (Grethe)

“Really!?” (Emilia)

Since we had confirmed about the most important matter, we let out a breath of relieve.

‘That’s great, there is no need to go on rampage.’

“Mea-sama woke up when I met you all earlier. When she knew the situation, she got mad and let Sirius out immediately.” (Grethe)

“That’s as a matter of course. Even though she is a child, she is quite influential.” (Emilia)

“Yes, it’s because everyone loves Mea-sama. And the greatest figure of this castle is not

the beastkin ruler, but Mea-sama.” (Grethe)

Aniki, who got out of prison, was taken to Mea’s room and it seemed that she became someone he could talk to.

Since the room was also in the inner part of the castle, we went through passageways and doors protected by armed beastkin many times, and we finally reached the room aimed.

“Mea-sama and Sirius are in this room, but actually, now... there is a little problem happening.” (Grethe)

“Problem? Do you mean that Aniki is not welcomed after getting out of jail?” (Reus)

“...He is probably welcomed in a different way. Anyhow, you will understand when you look at it.” (Grethe)

Grethe-san knocked the door while muttering the words with hidden meaning. After receiving permission to enter the room, she opened the door, and...

“You see! I can see with my eyes just for a moment, and I got to see the face of everyone a bit too!” (Mea)

“You’ve work hard. Good girl. But, it’s not good to overwork yourself. Everyone was really worried.” (Sirius)

“Yes! I’ll be careful!” (Mea)

“Guhh... Uuuhhh... Guooooohhh... Meaaa... whyyyy...” (??)

Over there were Aniki with the same gentle smile as when he stroked our head and a girl with a smile on the whole face.

And... there was a strange sight spreading where... a beastkin who was way bigger than me had teary eyes while releasing bloodlust.



— Sirius —

“This place suits for people like you!” (??)

The place that I was lead after coming to the castle was... a prison.

The room was surrounded by thick walls and it was dark since it was completely isolated from outside. It couldn't be helped because there were only a scorn illumination and shabby bed inside the prison.

My important mithril knife and clock with Elysion emblem were also taken away. Plus, I was also put on a heavy handcuffed made of steel.

It could be say as a bad treatment by those people.

“Is there a custom to put invited guests in prison in this country?” (Sirius)

“You are a criminal, so do you think that you are a guest? I know that you are the reason why Mary-sama collapsed.” (??)

“...What do you mean?” (Sirius)

According to the angry prison guard, the reason was I taught Mea how to handle mana and it seemed that Mea collapsed due to mana exhaustion.

Although I told her not to overdo it... what a troublesome girl.

“There will be a severe mana exhaustion if it is used unsparingly, but for her to collapse if she uses it normally is...” (Sirius)

“Mary-sama is our treasure! There is no way we can forgive you when you look at the situation with cruel eyes!” (??)

When people fell due to mana exhaustion, they would be fainted like being switched off and that was in order to automatically protect themselves.

Rather than releasing mana outside of the body, what I taught her was a way to circulate mana within the body, so she shouldn't be in such a bad condition.

That was why I told her that she would be fine because there was no need to mention about the troublesome part. It seemed that his head was completely full of Mea.

Anyhow, I tried to examine the surrounding by using [Search] in order to confirm the location, but...

“...What? My mana is...” (Sirius)

“Are you planning to escape with magic? That’s too bad. This prison is specially made against magic instead of strength. You can try if you can break this through.” (??)

When I released mana to the surroundings, the prison wall inhibit the mana. It seemed that it wasn’t possible to verify things. When I thought so, I also couldn’t use [Call] since the magic was using same method.

I lightly tapped the wall, and from the touch, I couldn’t do anything with bare hands. [Impact] was also probably difficult since the wall inhibited mana.

“Do you understand now? Well then, get inside until you reflect of what you have done. What, if you are obedient, I will immediately let you out. Of course, that’s when you apologize to Mary-sama!” (??)

The prison guard seemed satisfied as he only hit the prison and left without doing anything.

I planned to retaliate if he used his hands to interrogate forcibly, but wasn’t he an unusual gentleman?

For now... I obeyed him because I didn’t want to create a disturbance, but I never thought of remaining inside the prison.

While examining the inside of the prison when it became a blind spot from the prison guard who had been far away from the entrance, I tried to verify the situation found at the present time.

“That guy was angry because Mea had collapsed. If it so, the possibility of scheme or someone behind the scene seems to be low.” (Sirius)

He was truly angry because he was think of Mea only.

As for my formal attire, he totally didn't pay attention to the Elysion mantle. By the time the mantle was taken, it was put inside a bag. I wonder when they didn't really notice the Elysion emblem.

Anyway, there was also a possibility of getting out right away when Mea woke up and explained the situation, so I decided to take a rest in the prison for a while.



I rested as it was for a while, but rather than no response, there was no one came to visit.

It was hard to confirmed because I couldn't see the outside, but it would be noon soon.

“...Shall I make a move soon?” (Sirius)

I wasn't sure what would the siblings and Hokuto do when they knew that I was put in a prison.

I thought that they were still be at the residence, but they would feel suspicious if I didn't call them by the evening.

If I left thing as it was, they might casually attack the castle, so I supposed that I should act quickly.

The reason for prison breaking wasn't for myself, but it was to keep my companions in control.

‘What's weird reason, huh.’

“This prison look sturdy, so I can't cut corners. (Sirius)

The part that inhibited mana was the wall only, and that didn't mean I couldn't use magic.

First of all, in order to remove the obstructive handcuffs, I extended [String] from my fingertips and inserted it into the handcuffs' keyhole.

It was probably made of steel because there were many strong beastkin.

However, whether they thought that it was impossible to reach the keyhole by the hand of the person himself, the structure of the lock attached was simple.

Because of that, I succeeded in getting rid of the handcuffs easily by manipulating multiple [String]s.

“Next is...” (Sirius)

After that, I took out a sturdy wire which I had put in clothes. I bended the wire to make it easy to be used, and putting it into the keyhole of the iron bars from within the prison.

The big and sturdy lock seemed to be more complicated than the handcuffs’, but it was easier if I compared it to the locks in the previous life.

The locks were simple because on the occasion where beastkin escaped from prison, it was probably thought that they would break the prison rather than unlocking the lock.

“Compared to the work needed to unlock fingerprint authentication or electronic locks... this much is...” (Sirius)

Well, it took a bit of time since it had been a long time for me to do this. It was a few seconds later than in the past, but... well, it was still within the acceptable range, right?

Leaving the prison as it was, I went down a dark passage toward the side that I could sense while killing the sound of the footsteps.

And then, I found a resting place with a light and when I looked into it, I could confirm that the previous prison guard and his beastkin colleague were inspecting my knives. There was also the bag with my cloak inside placed right next to them.

Actually, I would like to collect the knives and mantle after stunning the guards, but since that wasn’t the purpose of prison breaking, I would skip that for the time being.

Besides...

“...That human has good knives.” (??)

“Oi oi, don’t tell me you want to have it?” (??)

“Who do you think want these knives!? If you think of me stealing these to rob Mary-sama... I don't think I can live, you know.” (??)

“Aah, as long as you understand. If I think about the same... I also don't think I can live.” (??)

Somehow, I didn't dislike them. If they were going to take of it, it was fine then.

Since their ability to concentrate was strangely lacking maybe because they were depressed, when I proceeded while targeting the blind spot, I was able to get through them without being noticed.



I went out of the prison wasn't to escape from the castle, but I wanted to move to a place where [Call] could be used.

I would informed the current situation to the disciples when I got up on the ground. I was going to return to the prison again after telling them to stay quiet but it took a while because the basement was wider than expected.

There were rooms where other beastkin were stationed while on the way to the prison. Taking that opportunity, I listened to the conversation to collect information.

“Haa... Mary-sama, is she alright?” (??)

“She has slept for more than half a day already, right? I want to see her running energetically...” (??)

“That will be impossible for a while, you know. Look, I had asked for a picture of Mary-sama, so just endure with this.” (??)

“How can I endure it!? This is not the real Mary-sama.” (??)

“If that's the case, give that back to me! It was expensive, you know!?” (??)

“Say, perhaps Mary-sama was not collapsing because of mana exhaustion...” (??)

“There is no such a thing! The court healers said it was due to mana exhaustion. She surely wakes up after some time!” (??)

“What if she still hasn’t wake up tomorrow?” (??)

“...Ah, aahh... it can’t be!?” (??)

“My, my bad! It was a lie. I’m sure she’ll wake up soon, so calm down... alright?” (??)

...That girl was truly loved.

She was being loved a bit too much, but looking from how the siblings had that feelings to me, it was impossible not to feel a sense of incongruity.

Yeah... If Mea awaken and defended me, I felt like that would solve everything.

I kept going through the basement while thinking so. Finally, I felt signs approaching when I found the stair to the ground, so I quickly hid myself in a shade.

“Wa-wait for me, Mary! There is no need for you to go there.” (??)

“That’s not good, Otou-san. It is because of my fault, so I’m going to get him and apologize!” (Mea)

“Ooh... what a sense of responsibility. You have grown up—... that’s not it! I will send some men to pick him up, so you can rest on the bed!” (??)

When I looked at the situation while hiding, Mea came down the stairs to the ground with a beastkin man who was larger than Reus.

That man was somewhat different from Mea. He had a tail and ears of a lion, but since his appearance closely resembled her, he might be Mea’s father.

In other words, the big Lionkin man was the beastkin ruler... was it?

His long hair was the same like Mea where it was tied on his back. I felt the dignity and intimidation as a king from the sharp eyes and the trained muscle, but... he disappeared when he was talking to Mea.

Somehow... it reminded me of that foolish old man and Reese's father, and this guy was also similar.

As I believed that this should be handled carefully, Mea's nose was moving and she looked to where I was.

"Eh... Onii-san?" (Mea)

"What!? Where!?" (??)

"Over there. Onii-san, you are there, right?" (Mea)

Dang... I was watching carelessly because of Mea's eyesight.

Since the beastkin ruler had also noticed my presence and had begun to unleash bloodlust, I appeared obediently.

"Bas-bastard! My cute Mary-..." (??)

"Onii-san!" (Mea)

The beastkin ruler was shouting while baring fangs at me, but Mea ran at me with a smile and clung to me.

...I felt that the situation was going further in a bad direction.

"Wh-what are you doing Mary!? You too, bastard! Release Mary!" (??)

"You see, I heard that Onii-san was imprisoned because of me. I'm sorry, Onii-san." (Mea)

"You did nothing bad, you know! But, embrace me too!" (??)

"Otou-san, silent! I hate Otou-san for doing cruel things to this gentle Onii-san!" (Mea)

"Gaahhh!?" (??)

"...Mea-sama, you got it wrong, you know. I am not put in prison." (Sirius)

Even if I got out of the prison thanks to Mea, my life would be targeted in various ways,

so, let's made up a story to give him a favor.

I guessed that it was better than being hated by his cute daughter.

"Eh? But, because I was collapsed, Onii-san was..." (Mea)

"Everyone was panicking when Mary-sama collapsed, so they were saying that unintentionally... right?" (Sirius)

"...Is that so?" (Mea)

"Ye-yes, that's right! I was a bit confused because Mary became like that. I can't say that it is different now, but... sorry." (??)

"Muu... well, it's fine, but don't lie anymore." (Mea)

And then, as I was doing this for the ruler, he immediately read my intention and matched the story with me.

Furthermore, it seemed that Mea believed it easily maybe because she was an innocent girl.

"I told them that I wanted to see the basement of the castle, so I had the chance to observe it. Your father is truly tolerant." (Sirius)

"Yeah! Although it's weird for a place to visit, he is my proud Otou-san!" (Mea)

"Heh, hehehe... really? I don't want to be called father by you!" (??)

The beastkin ruler had a complicated expression mixed with anger and delight. By the way, the latter part of her words was at the volume which could only be heard by me.

As Mea was smiling and didn't care about her angry father at all, she pulled my arm.

"You know, Onii-san. I want to thank you because I couldn't do anything until yesterday. So, I want you to come to my room." (Mea)

"You can't! You can't let him, Mary! It is too early for you to let a suspicious man in your room!" (??)

“You’re noisy, Otou-san!” (Mea)

“Guhaa!?” (??)

“Well then, could you please treat me for tea? Actually, my throat is thirsty.” (Sirius)

“Alright! I will have the best tea ready!” (Mea)

“Wa-wait a sec, Mary! I will also have tea with you! I must!” (??)

While receiving the beastkin ruler’s bloodlust from behind, I was pulled by Mea and led from the dark basement to her room.



And while on the way to her room, Grethe-san arrived. She was somehow searching for Mea as she was a bit out of breath.

“Mary-sama. Are you already fine to walk?” (Grethe)

“Ah, Grethe. Onii-san came here, so where are you going?” (Mea)

“Yeah... wait a sec...” (Grethe)

Grethe didn’t make eye contact with me. It might be because she felt somewhat guilty.

Then, in spite of saying that she as Mea’s escort yesterday, she walked away after confirming my condition. Mea seemed didn’t care about it since that was common, but it looked like Grethe had something to be done at any cost.

As I had a bad feeling, Mea, who had been pulling my arm, suddenly turned around.

“Uhm, I hope Onii-san speaks like yesterday. And, I’d like you to call me Mea.” (Mea)

“I’m sorry, but it is impossible to do that.” (Sirius)

Unlike yesterday when the relationship was vague, now I had known that she was the princess of this country, it was impossible after all.

Moreover, I refused because the beastkin ruler was nearby. Then, he stood behind me

and put his hands on my shoulders. If I didn't activate [Boost], his hands held a strength that was likely to dislocate my shoulders.

"Of course, you will call her that... right?" (??)

Although the beastkin ruler was smiling, it couldn't be helped to say that his face was crumpling.

Even though he had social status and standpoint, to allow this meant that he gave priority to the daughter over anything.

Anyhow, if I didn't call her that name, it felt like he was going to crush my shoulders as it was, so I had no other choice but to accept.

"Got it. Let's go, Mea." (Sirius)

"Yeah!" (Mea)

"Guh... uhh... if you are smiling at me... I will... guhh..." (??)

Well... I wonder if her parents would allow it.



After that, we arrived at the room while met some of Mea's attendant. We sat at a table and were waiting for tea to be served.

At the present time, Mea was sitting on the other side of me and she seemed having fun. Next to her was the beatskin ruler who was sitting and kept unleashing bloodlust. It was quite surreal sight.

It was a feeling of a cute plush toy and a ferocious-and-hungry beast lined up side by side.

After a while, the tea was prepared. As I nodded and listened to the result of training from Mea, the door of the room was knocked and Grethe came in...

"Mea-sama. There are guests." (Grethe)

"Sirius-sama!" (Emilia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Aniki!” (Reus)

“I-I’m coming in...” (Reese)

“It seems that you are safe, Sirius.” (Fia)

Somehow, my disciples also came here.

The first thing that I thought at that time was no one talked about the gate was being sliced or a part of castle was damaged. So, I was relieved because the disciples appeared normally.



Brief explanation about the people of this country...

Mea... is super popular idol.

In other words... it is close to a ‘religion’ that followed idols.

Will it be alright for such a country?

...For you who think about it, rest assured!

The author is also have similar thought!

✂This part is a small joke material that the author feels like writing it.



The Striking of Hokuto

On that day... there was a critical situation happened in front of the Arbitray's castle gate.

Many dogs, wolves and cats monsters were lining up in front of the castle gate and they were barking and made noises all at once as if motorcycles were being revved.

This was the characteristic, but why the head of all monsters were wrapped in white headband?

In the center of the monsters, a white wolf that was keenly staring at the castle gate with a dignified and majestic appearance who name was Hokuto, the general of Hokuto's group.

The headbands had [Sirius' Life] written on it, and they had been waiting for the battle to begin.

"General Hokuto! It's ready!" (??)

"...Woof." (Hokuto)

The youth of Silver Wolfkin also had the same headband as Hokuto and he wore a long jacket for biker gang with [Lior Suppression] words on it. He was Reus who was also the special commander of Hokuto's group.

"There is no problem with both right wing and left wing. We are waiting for General Hokuto's orders." (??)

The female Silver Wolfkin who wore maid dress was Emilia.

She had the similar intention as Hokuto and she was a reliable officer of Hokuto's group. Although the younger brother wore a special clothing, she wore maid dress anytime and anywhere.

"There, there. I will brush you again if you get return back safely." (??)

The girl who clearly had a different atmosphere was Reese.

She was an indispensable existence supporting from the back and she was in charge of healing in Hokuto's group.

She was full of motivation while brushing these monsters even now.

"Be careful, Hokuto. It seems that the enemies win over strange bunch to their side."
(??)

And that mysterious woman was... Fia.

Although she appeared at unexpected moments and in unexpected places, she was a reliable sister who watched Hokuto's group from the shadow.

Finally, after confirming the state of his friends who were brought along from outside...

{There is no place to die other than next to the general!} (??)

{There is no need to forgive those who touch the contra-ads of the Hokuto's group!}
(??)

{If you get licked, that's invalid~nya!} (??)

Hokuto was satisfied with the high moral of his companions.

Anyway, what would happen after this was to attack the castle.

This war was a holy war to recapture Sirius who was the god of the Hokuto's group.

It would be impossible with half-hearted resolution, but the morale was good enough.

Hokuto barked greatly, giving the signal of the war.

"Awooo—" (Hokuto)

Later, the curtain of the battle called [Hundred Wolves Incident] was opened.

– The preview of the next installment –

Hokuto's group attacks the castle.

However, due to the sneaky strategy by certain people, Hokuto was isolated.

The isolated Hokuto was attacked by a mysterious group.

It was an overwhelmingly unfavorable battle of 1:30000 ratio...

Next time, the Striking of Hokuto's 45th episode.

[Clash! The life or death struggle of Arbitray! The awakening of Dark Fluffy empire!]

✂It's not going to be continued.

Chapter 121

Even so...

“Sirius-sama! Are you safe!?” (Emilia)

“Aniki!” (Reus)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

I was surprised that the disciples rushed into the room. The siblings and Hokuto came close to me to make sure that I was alright.

Reese and Fia followed them from behind. I guessed that they were having hard trying to hold the siblings from the look of their bitter smile. After this, I would have to listen to them as a thanks for their hard work.

“Ah, it’s Hokuto-sama!” (Mea)

“Is that Hundred Wolves-sama? Who are these people...” (King)

“Lend me your ears...” (Mea)

Mea was pleased when she saw Hokuto, but the Beast King who didn’t understand the situation tried to protect Mea.

Grethe went around behind the cautious Beast King, whispered to his ears while looking at us.

“...Is it true!?” (King)

“Yes. If you look over there, you will understand...” (Grethe)

It seemed that Grethe was somehow explaining things about us. As soon as he confirmed that Hokuto was rubbing against my chest, the Beast King put his head under arms.

In the meantime, I was asked by the disciples what had happened when they were outside.

“As you can see, he is the person who is acknowledged by Hundred Wolves-sama. Besides, he taught Mary-sama a magic skill and treated her with meal without asking for any compensation. He is deserved to be believed in.” (Grethe)

“...Confirm that immediately and bring that back. I will take the responsibility.” (King)

“Understood.” (Grethe)

And then, Grethe went out of the room without making a sound. From the serious expression he had, it seemed that he understood that I was a person related to Elysion.

Normally, I should be angry with the bad treatment and I was put in jail. However, I wasn't punished during the interrogation, so I thought that it was fine if I could get back the things taken away from me.

In short, I didn't really mind too much.

Since I had received more severe response in the past life, this much only gave like a paralyzed sensation. But of course, if they did something cruel, I would return it back accordingly.

However... since I was like an envoy of Elysion from their eyes, it was no good if I easily forgave them and let them looked down on the Elysion country.

From here onwards, they should have to be very careful with their response and that was also the same to me. It was a mistake to wear that mantle as a formal attire.

“Hey Mary... what's with that...” (King)

“Hmm? What is it, Otou-san?” (Mea)

“...No, it's nothing.” (King)

He didn't say anything probably because it was hard to say in the place where Mea and other attendants were here.

On the standpoint of a king, he couldn't poorly display himself in front of the retainers.

Although the scale was overwhelmingly different, it wasn't like I didn't understand his feelings as a person who led a country.

By the way, should I observed the situation for a while since he was trying to apologize?



"I see. Onee-sans are learning a lot of things from Onii-san." (Mea)

"Yes, it is not only that, we were also rescued by Sirius-sama. I'm not sure until what extent that Sirius-sama's splendor will stop, but as for our goals—..." (Emilia)

"Say, Emilia. Are you trying to brainwash again?" (Fia)

"I am only telling the splendor of Sirius-sama." (Emilia)

"Oh really? Try saying that again while looking at me and Reese." (Fia)

"I don't quite understand it, but I can understand that Onii-san is amazing." (Mea)

After that, as the disciples and Mea finished introducing to each other and as they were talking in a friendly manner, the door of the room was opened and Grethe came back while holding my knives and the cloak that were taken away.

"Here you go. There is nothing missing, right?" (Grethe)

"Yes. But... instead of the mantle, is it fine to return the weapons in the castle?" (Sirius)

"It's fine. The Beast king is not lacking behind with the adventurers who hold weapons, and I will also protect Mary-sama." (Grethe)

As I could see, the Beast King didn't say anything when the disciples had their weapons here.

His strength was probably formidable. I also have no plan to attack them, so I guessed that it was fine if the other side was convinced.

After returning my weapons and lowering her head, Grethe headed toward Mea.

“Mary-sama. I have prepared simple meals. Would you like to eat it with everyone?”
(Grethe)

“Ah, yes. I still haven’t eaten yet.” (Mea)

“Hmm, that would be nice. Don’t hesitate to have a meal here.” (King)

Whether I remembered it when I was told that, my belly made a grumbling sound. It was obvious since I hadn’t eaten lunch yet.

The disciples seemed to be in the similar situation. They were a bit embarrassed as their stomach made a sound. Then, a servant in the castle brought a big plate and put it on the table.

There were sandwiches and fruits enough for number of people on the big plate. It was light meal like picking with hands.

“I keep it light because it’s already pass noon. I’ll add more if it’s not enough.” (Grethe)

“Thank you very much. Well then...” (Sirius)

Rather than me and Fia, I judged that this wasn’t enough for the siblings and Reese. Should I made the dinner a bit more extravagant?

Judging from the appearance, there was no suspicious ingredients in it, and since Hokuto moved his nose also, I didn’t think that there would be a problem. Since the Beast King was eating it without hesitation at all, it didn’t feel like they intended to poison us.

After that, when I put a sandwich into my mouth, the disciples also started eating.

“...Yeah. This is alright, Mary-sama.” (Grethe)

“Thank you.” (Mea)

It was similar to the time with my stew. Apparently, Mea wouldn’t eat unless Grethe did a poison tasting.

Nevertheless, it was troublesome.

Even though they were more or less royalties, it was strange because they were eating same dishes as us.

By the time I finished eating the meal with such a weird feeling, Mea looked a bit sleepy maybe because she was full.

Since she just woke up after collapsing due to mana exhaustion, it was hard to say that she was already in a normal condition.

She probably became sleepy after moving around in order to help me and talking with my disciples.

“Mary. You’re still sick, so stay in bed some more.” (King)

“But, Onii-san and Hokuto-sama are...” (Mea)

“I will entertain them. Since they have helped Mary in many ways, you don’t need to worry to worry if I treat them with dinner.” (King)

Although it was pushy, she nodded since those words were as a king and not as an idiot parent as before.

Whether she was relieved with my situation, she obediently headed toward the bed in the inner part of the room. After confirming that, we left the room together with the Beast King.

The Beast King gave a sharp look as we headed out from the room, but he didn’t display murdering intent.

“You are Sirius, huh.” “First of all, let’s calm down because I want to talk to you as a king. I would like you to come to my room.” (King)

“Only me?” (Sirius)

“...For you to bring along people like them, what kind of existence are you?” (King)

“They are my precious disciples and my family. Of course, this guy is also my precious family.” (Sirius)

When I evidently said so, the disciples nodded with a smile, and Hokuto rubbed his

face against my chest.

The Beast King who was looking at such a sight softened his expression a little.

“Family... is it? If that’s the case, I don’t mind letting them to come too. Because I’m the one who made a mistake here.” (King)

As the Beast King said so, he turned around and walked away. So, we followed him.

When the Beast King walked ahead, it felt like his back was so big and he naturally gave an intimidation feeling that overwhelms whoever came near.

Although he was merely a doting parent whom I met by chance, it made me understand why he was the king of this country.



We were brought along by the Beast King to his private chamber which was also at the innermost part of the castle.

Mea’s room was decorated with flowers and lovely ornaments, but his was a practical oriented room that wasn’t placed with unnecessary items except a table and a bed.

“This room also serves as my office. You all can have a seat.” (King)

When we sat at the big table in the middle of the large room, the attendant waiting in the room prepared the tea and quietly left the room.

After having only us remain in the room, the Beast King got up...

“Many things had happened, but first, I would like to apologize. Sirius, I’m really sorry.” (King)

He deeply bowed at me.

From the situation, I considered the one at fault was the retainers, but as a person who stood above them, even though he was a king, he bowed his head to an adventurer.

“...Although you are apologizing, you didn’t intend to imprison me in the first place, right?... Isn’t it fine to think that?” (Sirius)

“It was miserable, but it’s true. We have made our innocent lord to be wrongly judged because of our mistake. It will be a problem if we do not apologize.” (Grethe)

According to the story, before the Beast King heard the situation from Grethe, he thought of me as a bad insect trying to do something to his daughter.

Even though he felt angry when Mea collapsed because of the [Boost] that I thought, it seemed that he didn’t considered putting me in jail.

“So, how about the culprit?” (Sirius)

“Currently, we are looking for all those involved in your imprisonment. I intend to take appropriate measures after that, but if you want something, I will listen. However, I want you to spare their life.” (King)

“I’m not going to ask to that extent. It seemed that you understand the important matter. So, I think you, as the king, can decide a proper judgment.” (Sirius)

“Yeah. At that time, I’ll give proper judgment, and I will inform you later. But... my head hurts. I’m sorry, can you show me your cloak?” (King)

“Here you go, you may check it.” (Sirius)

The Beast King spread the mantle handed. He lifted his face after confirming the largely drawn emblem.

“I have only seen it in documents, but it is certainly the emblem of the famous Elysion. I have one question. Can you tell me the situation how did your mantle got taken?” (??)

“Well... they hadn’t seen my face until after I arrived at the castle. They took my mantle without confirming it and put it in a bag. The prison guard also didn’t check it. So, I don’t think they properly see the emblem.” (Sirius)

“Since it is a famous but located in a far continent, maybe they don’t know the emblem of Elysion.” (King)

“It seems to be like that. Even if they know the Magic Master, they are not necessarily know the emblem of the country.” (Fia)

“No... it is an emblem attached to this high quality mantle. Even if they don’t know,

they need to check the emblem and report it. For this as well, we have to give punishment.” (King)

Information transmission was important after all. If my disciples were doing such a thing, it would be natural for me to be angry.

The Beast King returned the mantle while sighing deeply and he lowered his head again toward me.

“Dear Elyssion’s envoy, we have no intention to oppose your country. If you want something, I will make it possible. Can you somehow peacefully overlook this matter?” (King)

“I don’t mind. I’m not angry until that far.” (Sirius)

“Hmm, your anger is justifiable–... eh, what did you say just now?” (King)

“I am not angry. Besides, I am an adventurer and I am not visiting this country as an envoy.” (Sirius)

It was true that the treatment of the people in the castle was bad, but it was also due to a bad luck.

Teaching [Boost] to a girl who I didn’t know about and going to the castle while wearing the mantle... well, if Mea, who was beyond excited, didn’t collapse, it wouldn’t cause an uproar up to this extent.

Besides, Princess Lifell didn’t give the mantle to make me as the envoy of the country. I was also told that I could do anything with it as long as it didn’t give a shame.

Anyway, as for myself, since I had no intention to make it as a political issue...

“I have one suggestion. Is there anyone other than the King-sama and Grethe-san know about this emblem at this moment?” (Sirius)

“Oh yes... this is probably reported to Grethe’s master, McDatt, I think?” (King)

“In that case, how about letting the two of them, and King-sama to keep silent about the emblem? That’s because it is a very complicated story about me having it.” (Sirius)

In other words, I was invited here as an adventurer.

I was caught because I was thought of bringing grief to Mea, but if I asked Mea and the Beast King to explain about it, the misunderstanding should be solved.

I had a feeling that this would be insufficient for those who rashly acted would reflect the situation, but they weren't doing it with ill intention. I would let the Beast King to quietly deal with this matter.

When I told that we both should avoid troublesome things, the Beast King was taken aback.

"...Will this be fine for you?" (King)

"That's because you directly apologized to me. Later, please give proper judgment to those who rashly acted." (Sirius)

"I am very grateful, but even if this is merely resulted in less severe than expected, this is also involving the dignity of the country. Please let me make amends." (King)

I didn't need that, but it might be better to have something in order for the other side to proceed in logical manner.

So, I decided to receive money as a reparation, but I didn't tell him the important things.

"I had forgotten one thing, and that's because this matter ends amicably even though I was thrown into prison. However, if you lay your hands on my disciples and inhumanely treat them... please remember that I will oppose you together with Hokuto." (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"...I will bear it in mind." (King)

Just to make sure that Elysion wouldn't be looked down, I didn't forget to give him warning.

Even if the matter of the mantle became a public knowledge, even if the Beast King understood, the surroundings were not necessarily the same.

We continued our discussion for a while. In the meantime, Grethe came after being called by an attendant, so he asked her about the emblem.

“I didn’t directly see the emblem, but I heard from Reese that he is an envoy of a certain country.” (Grethe)

“Did you report it to anyone?” (King)

“I have reported it to McDatt-sama. But he said that it shouldn’t be told to others but the King-sama. So I guess only three people know it?” (Grethe)

Fortunately, it seemed as expected by the Beast King.

When Grethe was consequently told of what had been decided, she nodded as if she understood...

“I guess that to some extent, but tell McDatt about this at once.” (King)

“Understood.” (Grethe)

“Now, I have to solve everyone’s misunderstanding about you...” (King)

After that, we quietly went out of the room and as we followed behind the Beast King, he called a servant from outside the room and gave instructions.

The reason why Mea collapsed wasn’t because of me but because of her efforts. He told each member of the castle that to get angry with me was an act of insulting Mea.

“...It will be good with this. It seems that this will take some time, so I’d like you to wait in this room for a while.” (King)

“Surely, no one can come to this room without permission.” (Fia)

“Yes, so relax and take it easy. Even so, you all are a strange bunch. You naturally act even if you are in front of a king.” (King)

“I have acquainted with royalties, so I’m somewhat used to it.” (Sirius)

“If it’s about powerful, I know how amazing is that.” (Fia)

“Hou... I find you more and more interesting. I rarely get out of the castle, so if you don't mind, could you teach me various things?” (King)

With the connection of Reese, I was making acquaintance with a king and a next queen candidate, so if it was about the sense of intimidation, it might be obvious to say that it was like getting bump from Hokuto every day.

However... even though the Beast King said that we were strange, I thought that he was trying to talk normally with us.

I instinctively felt that I wasn't really angry. Well, he was probably trying to build a good relationship even a little. And the quickness of this change was also a characteristic often seen in beastkin.

I think that these were political affairs, but since the Beast King was worried about Mea, we kept talking while pretending this situation as taking a break.

After that, the conversation remained here and there, but when it became about Elysion, he remembered the incident, and held his head.

“This time, if it wasn't about you guys, it would really become unpleasant. I feel that this situation are both good luck and bad luck...” (King)

“There is also a possibility that any real envoy will be sent, so would it be easier if you think that this incident is like a rehearsal?” (Sirius)

“Since there were many mistakes done, it was a really useful and practical rehearsal.” (Emilia)

“It is important to reflect on, isn't it!?” (Reus)

“...Good grief. It is necessary for us to focus on education for a while.” (King)

The siblings were angry because I was put in prison, and that was why they were a bit harsh.

I didn't think those were words for a king, but since it was also the truth, the Beast King accepted it with a bitter smile with silently admitted it. It was strange when the daughter was involved, but it seemed that he was a tolerant king.

Incidentally, while introducing each other and negotiating the amount of reparation, Mea came in.

Her complexion wasn't bad since she just woke up, and her condition seemed to have recovered to a great extent.

And at the same time of Mea's appearance, the dignity and intimidation displayed by the Beast King...

"Ooh! Hey Mary, are you alright getting up already!?" (King)

"Yeah, I'm alright! More importantly, Otou-san, everyone is... ouch!" (Mea)

"I have properly resolved the misunderstandings, so I'm welcoming them! Now, Mary, let me check your condition!" (King)

"Otou-san, wait a minute. Hokuto-sama is also fluffy today, isn't it!?" (Mea)

"...Woof." (Hokuto)

"Uuooo... hey Mea..." (King)

...disappeared in an instant.

The Beast King tried to hug his daughter who came into the room with a sloppy smile, but Mea easily avoided him and clung to Hokuto.

If it was me, he probably released bloodlust, but since the other side was Hokuto, a Hundred Wolves, he put up an indescribable look.

Seriously... he became an idiot king when it came to the daughter.

"Mea-sama, that is not nice." (Grethe)

"King-sama. I understand your feelings, but please be more firm especially in front of the guests." (??)

Grethe appeared after Mea, but she was with a middle-aged man.

Since Grethe was behind that man, he was probably McDatt which was mentioned

several times.

He seemed to be the man who supported the king from behind the scenes, but what concerned me most was the fact that he was a human. Since it was a town and a castle for beastkin, it was unusual to have a human in such a place.

After that McDatt soothed the Beast King who seemed to be crying, he came close to me and asked for a handshake, so I grasped his hand.

“Nice to meet you all. My name is McDatt. I am the King’s close aide and Mary-sama’s education officer. Please to make your acquaintance.” (McDatt)

“Likewise. My name is Sirius.” (Sirius)

“I have received a report about Sirius-kun from Grethe. I would like to apologize about the time you were unfairly treated in the castle.” (McDatt)

“We have already talked about that, so you don’t have to worry about it anymore. I think that you have heard it from Grethe-san, but...” (King)

“Yes, I will never say it because it will be helpful as well. I appreciate for Sirius-kun’s kind generosity.” (McDatt)

McDatt also greeted the disciples as it was, but even when he saw Fia, who was an Elf, he didn’t have an ill intention eyes, and he also properly greeted Hokuto.

Although he seemed timid, he looked like a kind man...

“However... I overlook the matter this time, but please refrain from teaching Mary-sama next time.” (McDatt)

...As expected, this person was also the same kind, huh?

He was smiling, but I was sighing in my mind because of the anger released bottom of the heart.

“Look here, my tail is also fluffy, you know? Don’t you want to touch it?” (King)

“Tou-san’s tail is also good, but Hokuto-sama’s is fluffier.” (Mea)

“Gahuu!?” (King)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

‘I’m sorry, Hokuto. Just keep it for a while.’



After that, the matter about me was spread in the castle, and it was already night by the time the misunderstanding was resolved.

By the way, the bunch who rashly acted and the prison guard suddenly came prostrating in front of me. It made me think that they have a talk with the Beast King before this.

“I’m really sorry!” (??)

“We will do anything we can!” (??)

“Forgive me!” (??)

“Have you all done bad things? It’s no good to do that, you know.” (Mea)

“...Mea-sama overdid things, but yes, that was the cause.” (Sirius)

“Auu... sorry...” (Mea)

“““Please forgive us, Mea-sama!””” (??)

“Is the person they need to apologize has changed, Aniki?” (Reus)

As Reus said, they had made a proper apology, so I decided to forgive them since they had received firm punishment from the Beast King.

For starters, they were not scoundrels, and those men were really crying while being preached by Mea.

After that, we had dinner at the castle as promised.

“Now, don’t hesitate to eat. It is dishes made by our castle proud chefs.” (King)

Since I wasn't an official envoy from Elysion but an adventurer instead, the dinner was only in a spacious guest room but it was still too much for us.

"Another please. This time, you can put double the amount." (Reese)

"The wine taste different, isn't it? Could you give two or three more?" (Fia)

"I like Aniki's flavor more, but this is also delicious!" (Reus)

"The taste of the ingredients is fresh and tasty. It lost to Sirius-sama's dishes, but..." (Emilia)

"Don't compare it in public. That's rude." (Sirius)

"Hahaha, don't mind about it. Preference is different from person to person. More importantly, it is enough if you enjoy having the dishes." (King)

That was quite tolerant, but... why the Beast King was here?

Although they were royalties, I thought that something was different when we were having dinner in a guest room instead of his private room where we were for a while.

"Mea-sama, it is alright to eat this too." (Grethe)

"Yes! I want to eat this next." (Mea)

Well... that was because Mea was here.

However, since the Beast King was lenient in front of her daughter, I guessed that it was fine not to be formal, right?

When I looked closely, unlike earlier, the Beast King's tail seemed to be strangely fluffy. Perhaps he had taken care of it as a counter to Hokuto.

"I want to eat Onii-san's stew again." (Mea)

"It seems Mea-sama also understand that. Sirius-sama's dishes are the best." (Emilia)

"Yes! That stew was really delicious!" (Mea)

“Ooh... Mary has such a dazzling smile. Hey Sirius, teach the stew to the chef! I’ll pay as much as you like!” (King)

Unfortunately, Mea seemed didn’t noticed that, but I wouldn’t mention it since the Beast King also forgot about it.



Such a noisy dinner continues and when we almost finished eating the dishes... Hokuto, who was lying next to me, suddenly stood up.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“...It seems that something is approaching.” (Sirius)

“Aniki! Hokuto-san says don’t be careless!” (Reus)

When I immediately used [Search], I caught a reaction of something that came closer to this place with a tremendous momentum.

The misunderstanding was already resolved, so I didn’t think that enemies would come because we were inside the castle, but since Hokuto gave a warning, he probably felt something unpleasant.

“Could it be...” (King)

It seemed that the Beast King also noticed the approaching reaction, but far from being in a hurry, he hung his head with a bitter face.

Just to be sure, I told the disciples to watch out through [Call]. I started hearing violent footsteps from outside, and when I thought that it stopped in front of the door of the guest room...

“Old man! Is Mary safe!?” (??)

The one that appeared while kicking the door was a young man of Tigerkin who looked like the Beast King if he was young.

However, his expression seemed frantic and he was heavily breathing as if he was running with full power.

“...Why did you come here? I thought that you were studying in the mountain?” (King)

“I heard that my dear sister collapsed, and that’s why I decided to come back!” (??)

The young man overlooked the guess room while shouting, and by the time his eyes lit up when finding Mea... a breeze of wind blew even though it was indoors.

“Ooh... my dear sister! You’re safe–... guhuu!?” (??)

And as the young man fell down as the wind blew, a tall woman was standing on his back.

It was a strange woman with sharp looking eyes. She was a Tigerkin with white ears and tail.

And...

“...That’s fast.” (Sirius)

I was also being careless, but I couldn’t see the move behind his back. The speed was as if it was totally like a teleportation.

Hokuto was also on guard without delay, so there was no mistake that this woman was definitely strong.

Her appearance was closely resembling a military soldier. Although she was only standing, I couldn’t make a bad move since she was releasing a sense of intimidation that caused the surroundings to shrink.

To put it simply, it was the same as the Strongest Sword, Lior.

While everyone unable to say anything to such a sudden intruder, when I thought whether the woman was looking at the surrounding with sharp eyes, Mea lightly muttered while being startled.

“...O, Okaa-san?” (Mea)

It seemed that troubles would still continue.



Presenting Hokuto

Hokuto-kun was angry on that day.

It was because Hokuto-kun's Master was put in prison in the castle.

For Hokuto-kun, the Master was a family. Above all, he was someone important that was hard to come by.

If Hokuto-kun's Master was caught, it wasn't confirmed if his voltage of anger would stop. It was severe. He was in a state of extreme rage.

"Yes. We're going that way to rescue Sirius-sama!" (Emilia)

Since the juniors were full of motivation, Hokuto-kun went to the castle to rescue the Master, but...

""Stop it!"" (Reese/Fia)

"It's cold!?" (Reus)

"Wah, wha!? Fia-san, your skirt is turned up! Please stop it since Sirius-sama is not here!" (Emilia)

"Woof!?" (Hokuto)

They were stopped by Reese-chan's and Fia-san's magic.

Both juniors were hit by the magic launched and became calmed. In the meantime, Hokuto-kun reflexively avoided it, but he was also calmed down.

And when the discussion ended, Hokuto-kun went toward the castle, but even though there were many things came out one after another, he was able to enter the castle.

As Hokuto-kun was traveling inside the castle with the guidance from Grethe-san who he met yesterday, an unpleasant image filled his head.

What if the Master was being beaten in prison at this time, or he was yelled at, or he

was forced to brush beyond hope... anyhow, if the Master was badly treated, Hokuto-kun's limiter would definitely be off.

Hokuto-kun would do this and that to all beastkin who lived in this castle...

As Hokuto-kun thought of it over and over again, his anger was about to explode, and then the door of the room, where the Master was there, was opened by the hands of Grethe-san...

"Why are you guys here!? There, there, you seem to have worried." (Sirius)

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun was stroked by the Master after being reunited, and his anger was beautifully dissipated.

But, as expected, when Hokuto-kun recalled the time when the Master was put in prison, his anger rekindled.

"Gurururu!" (Hokuto)

"There, there, I'll brush you when we get back, alright." (Sirius)

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

The anger was dissipated.

Chapter 122

The Results of Having Taken in Various Ways

I hadn't been walking around the town yet, but I had simply listened about this country from Emilia and Fia.

The name of the Beast King who ruled Arbitray where many beastkin lived was... Eisen Diaz.

In addition to having the strength not to shame his forged muscles, the one who was called as the Beast King was a Lionkin who had a fitting ability.

I judged that he severely doted the daughter, but since the daughter was loved by everyone, it seemed to be a slight problem in this country.

I got acquainted with his daughter, Mary Diaz, but it seemed that the Beast king had another child.

He was Mea's brother, Keith Diaz.

He was a young man who was two years older than me. However, he wasn't a Lionkin like his father, but a Tigerkin instead.

The mother of Mea and Keith... the wife of the Beast King was...

"Isabella. Did you also come back because you worried about her?" (Eisen)

...Isabella Diaz.

The tall Tigerkin woman who held a body with proportion not amusing to a model approached Reus.

While having her white long hair fluttering like snow, Isabella turned around because of the Beast King words, and quietly nodded.

She was still on Keith's back though.

“Mother. Please step aside...” (Keith)

“...” (Isabella)

She stepped on her son’s back as if it was a natural thing to do, but it seemed that it wasn’t on purpose.

Isabella quietly got off Keith’s back due to the appeal and then he stood behind Keith who got up. She kept unleashing a sense of intimidation while giving a sharp look toward Mea.

It seemed that spoiled his start, but Keith, who got dust on his body, pointed at us while getting a fresh start.

“I heard from a messenger, Oyaji! He told me that Mea had collapsed because that human adventurer taught her magic!” (Keith)

“Calm down, Keith. It’s already settled.” (Eisen)

“You bastard! I heard that you did a terrible thing to my sister!” (Keith)

Keith, who didn’t listen to his father, glared at me while approaching closer, but Reus came in between and stopped his move.

“Wait. What are you going to do to Aniki?” (Reus)

“Unrelated person can shut up. I definitely can’t forgive this guy!” (Keith)

“I’m stopping you because I am related. Don’t you think you can ignore me and lay your hand on Aniki!” (Reus)

As they stood side by side, Keith was slightly taller. Looking at the forged muscles like Rues, I judged that he was considerably trained.

The glaring between them continued, and when they clasped fists at the same time...

“‘House’, Reus.” (Sirius)

“Ouu!” (Reus)

“I said calm down!” (Eisen)

“Guhaa!?” (Keith)

Since they would destroy the guest room if they fought here, the fight was interrupted by my command and the Beast King fist that was swung down.

Although it wasn't about as Isabella, the speed of stepping in displayed by the Beast King was truly remarkable.

“Ouch! What are you doing, Oyaji?!” (Keith)

“You, what were you planning to do? Listen to me first. You too, Isabella.” (Eisen)

“...” (Isabella)

Isabella, who was staring at a certain point, nodded at the words of the Beast King. The three of them turned their back to us and shared information.

And then, the ladies were approaching and talking to Mea who was trembling with a sharp gaze from Isabella.

“Mea-chan, are you alright?” (Fia)

“...Yes.” (Mea)

“That is Mea's mother, is it? It is very hard to say, but...” (Emilia?)

“Yes, she is really beautiful, but... why is she staring that much?” (Reus)

“Mother... has always been like that to me.” (Mea)

Mea was unusually quiet since her mother's appearance, but if people were given that sharp look and intimidation, it would be natural to shrink.

This was completely hard to deal with and although they were a parent and child, they seemed not able to talk face to face.

“...Anyway. Refrain from acts that are rude to them.” (Eisen)

“But, Oyaji, it is true that he caused our cute Mary to collapse, right?” (Keith)

“I understand your feelings well. Actually, I also thought the same until a while ago. But, they are not bad people after I spoke with them. Although Mary had only met them yesterday, she is longing for them. Leaving that matter aside, can you see who is over there?” (Eisen)

“What are you talking about, Oyaji– uooh!? Could it be Hundred Wolves-sama!?” (Keith)

“...” (Isabella)

I could hear the conversation between the Beast King and the others. Apparently, they were too focusing on Mary and didn’t notice the presence of Hokuto.

Keith, who was late for noticing his presence, was surprised, but the mother, Isabella, remained expressionless. Was that because of her being a strong person?

And then, the Beast King kept persuading while choosing the right words. It seemed that he had decided to hide the matter of Elysion from the family members.

“Anyway, if it is more than this, you will involve the dignity of our country. Stop your foolish act like inviting them for a fight.” (Eisen)

“I can’t consent to that!” (Keith)

“Hey, what are you not convinced at!?” (Eisen)

“The girls are fine, but that human and the male beastkin are no good! It is still too early to bring a man close to her age!” (Keith)

He was a child of a doting parent, and it seemed he was a truly foolish brother.

This was common in stories, but was a man of the sister no good unless he got the approval from them? This was like getting along with a sister... no, the hurdles seemed high to the extent that the top wasn’t visible.

Not only Mea, I wondered if the brother able to get married in the future.

“I also understand that feeling well! However, if you pull something beyond this, you

will make Mea sad. Do you want to see that girl cries?" (Eisen)

"Kuh... it can't be helped then. It's not good since I haven't seen her for a while." (Keith)

"That's what I said. I was stopped because she refused me. More importantly, give a proper greeting-..." (Eisen)

"...Fight." (Isabella)

Incidentally, when the discussion reached the conclusion, Isabella suddenly opened her mouth.

When I thought of what she would say for the first time after appearing in front of us, the word was belligerent, and as I expected, the Beast King was unable to hide surprises.

"...Isabella, are you serious?" (Eisen)

"...I want to fight." (Isabella)

"Do you understand the circumstances after I told that?" (Eisen)

The Beast King wasn't asking her as a father, but as a King. However, Isabella calmly nodded.

The couple staring with sharp gazes as it was, but after a while, the Beast king sighed as if he had given up.

"...I'll negotiate." (Eisen)

"Oyajii! Me too!" (Keith)

"Shut up, everything is depending on the other side." (Eisen)

As their discussion ended, the Beast King came in front of me with his wife and son.

By the way, as the volume of family discussion was gradually bigger, I heard it without reinforcing my hearing since in the middle of their discussion.

"I'm sorry for causing anxiety. First of all, let me introduce my family. This is my wife,

Isabella, and this is my son, Keith.” (Eisen)

“...I am sorry about earlier. I am Keith.” (Keith)

“...Isabella.” (Isabella)

“Nice to meet you, I am Sirius.” (Sirius)

“To be honest, I have let you suffer earlier. So, this is something very hard to ask, but...” (Eisen)

“I heard it midway, so Isabella-sama wants to fight with us?” (Sirius)

“It’s very helpful since you are quick to understand. My wife wants to find and fight strong people like you guys.” (Eisen)

Her appearance looked beautiful like a tall model, but the inside was like a military soldier.

The sense of intimidation from her made me remembered Lior-Jiisan, but unlike that Strongest Sword, the aggressiveness seemed to be a bit insignificant. If it was Jii-san, he would swing his sword without asking questions.

“This is also unrelated to Mary. She just wants to fight against your strength. I will give you compensation if you agree with this.” (Eisen)

“What if I refuse?” (Sirius)

“That is fine. To begin with, I can’t force you. But... it’s been a long time since my wife proactively said that she would like to fight. So, I would like you to hear her out.” (Eisen)

“Will it be alright if I talk with everyone for a bit?” (Sirius)

“Sure, no problem. It is still good enough even if you only consider it.” (Eisen)

While enduring the aggressive feeling, I gathered the disciples away from the Beast King.

I already had the answer, but I should properly inform it to everyone. Well, it seemed

that my thought was conceived from the expression of the disciples.

“It seems that you have decided, isn’t it?” (Emilia)

“You are going to fight... right?” (Reese)

“Yes, I’m thinking of fighting and the other side also wants it.” (Sirius)

Although Isabella was expressionless, the feeling of wanting to fight was somehow clearly transmitted.

By including hierson, Keith, I thought that such a task was their characteristics that they couldn’t get used to it unless they had a fight once, but it might be troublesome if we didn’t fight them after this.

“Aniki. Let me fight with Keith-sama.” (Reus)

“That is my plan since the beginning. You should show the results of your training.” (Sirius)

“Ou! Leave it to me!” (Reus)

“It can’t be help when it comes to injuries, but please stop the battle as soon as I think that it is dangerous.” (Reese)

If they were both strong, there was a possibility that one mistake would be fatal and one of them would die. The opponents were royalties, so it was certainly troublesome if they were seriously injured.

Even so, I decided to let Reus fight for him to gain experience.

Lior-Jiisan also thought Reus would surpass him, and that was because Reus was getting stronger by fighting many strong people.

I predicted that Keith’s ability was probably close to Reus. If there was a room, I was planning to let him fight with Isabella who seemed to be superior.

Of course, it would be a story after discussing and having promised not to take responsibility no matter what happened after the fight.

When the discussion ended, Mea, who stayed by our side instead of her family, murmured as if she wasn't convinced.

"Okaa-san. Why do you want to fight so much?" (Mea)

"Well... I've always been like this, I think?" (Isabella)

"I also fought with Isabella when I came here. I lost in the blink of an eye, but thanks to that, I became Mary-sama's escort." (Grethe)

"Although Onii-chan is training, he is always kept staring at me. I wonder if it's not good if I also don't become strong." (Mea)

She seemed scared and unable to approach, but she still wanted to ask her mother after all.

I would like to give some advice, but since I didn't know anything about Isabella, I couldn't allow myself to be misunderstood because of poor consideration.

I turned my back at Mea, who had a lonely face, and I went toward the Beast King to give the answer.

Since the night was already late by the time the negotiation was over, it was decided to have the fight during tomorrow afternoon.

Although we were told that it was fine to stay in the castle as it was, I politely refused because it was better to stay in the [Wolf King] inn where we left the carriage. Plus, I needed to do preparation there.

"The people in the castle already know about you guys, so you will not be stopped at the gate. I would like you to come to the castle tomorrow without worry." (Eisen)

"You definitely have to come. I won't forgive you if you run away!" (Keith)

"See you tomorrow!" (Mea)

"..." (Isabella)

And then, we left the castle while being sent off with various facial expressions from the Beast king family. We returned to the inn to prepare for the fight tomorrow.



The next day... we came to the castle. We followed the words of the Beast King and easily went through the gate. Although it was inside of the castle, we were led to a big outdoor open space.

It seemed like a small stadium. In the audience seating, they were beastkin who wore good quality attires, and beastkin who displayed an air of a soldier.

“This place is a place used to conduct ceremonies and ability tests. It is a sturdy place. Even if you go all out, it will be fine.” (Keith)

“There are quite a few people come watching, isn’t it?” (Sirius)

“I brought most people in the castle here. It is according to Oyaji’s expectation.” (Keith)

Keith seemed to be reluctant even though he was entrusted to guide us, but he was displaying politeness by properly answering questions when asked.

The Beast King’s expectation was to let those who worked in the castle to watch the battle.

Here in Arbitray, strong people were valued but there seemed to be a few who were not convinced about the situation of Mea even after listening to the story.

Actually, it would be an evidence of strong people by fighting Isabella. Even though the spectators’ expressions were filled with curiosity and pity, I completely didn’t sense any gaze with anger or bloodlust.

Aside from that, the match would be held from noon because the Beast King informed it to the people in the castle and there was also a personal tendency to finish the political affairs that had been delayed.

“Aah, Onii-san! Hokuto-sama!” (Mea)

“...So you have come?” (Eisen)

“...” (Isabella)

The Beast King, his wife and Mea were standing in the center of the battle ground, but

Mea, who noticed us, ran toward our direction...

“Ooh! My sister, your brother definitely won’t lose—...” (Keith)

“Welcome, Onii-san. Do your best today.” (Mea)

“Uooo... Hey, Maryyy—...” (Keith)

“““Mary-sama!?””” (??)

And then, she avoided Keith, who was waiting while spreading out his hands, and jumped into my chest.

I wonder if this was also because of a parent and child. It was exactly the same development as the father.

Furthermore, together with the screams of the beastkin, who witnessed the sight of Mary hugging me, echoed and countless envy and bloodlust were fired at me.

However, Mea didn’t care about such a situation at all. She, then, happily laughed while hugging Hokuto. She was still a girl, but she was already sneaky woman.

“Stop throwing bloodlust at Aniki. I will not easily let it go!” (Reus)

“Are they planning to challenge Sirius-sama? Let’s turn the table around and do this.” (Emilia)

“Calm down, you guys. It seems that you don’t have to lay your hands.” (Sirius)

While the angry shouts echoed, Isabella stroke her tail on the ground as she released the intimidation... the stadium became quiet in a moment.

The tails of the beastkin who sat on the seating stood up at the same time, and their ears hanged down as if they were frightened. It seemed that a complete hierarchical relationship was established.

“Let’s start when everyone has settled down. First is the match between Keith and the guest, Reus.” (Eisen)

As the Beast King took over the stadium that became silent, Reus and Keith left us and

went away from the stadium.

“Reus. As a disciple, don’t you dare to lose to somehow who was rude to Sirius-sama.”
(Emilia)

“Ou! I got that, Nee-chan.” (Reus)

“I’ll be glad if I would be fighting Keith-sama, but since I probably would cut him with my magic, I will leave him to you this time.” (Emilia)

“Nee-chan, I also have the possibility of cutting him with sword...” (Reus)

“You can do that much, right?” (Emilia)

“That is true.” (Reus)

The siblings, who separated from me, seemed to have a dangerous conversation, but I decided not to ask. At any rate, since Emilia greatest magic is a slicing magic, I felt relieved that she was refrained from having a match this time.

And then, when I looked at the opponents, Keith and Isabella, both of them were also facing each other and were talking.

“...” (Isabella)

“It’s fine, Mother. I will fight will all my strength.” (Keith)

“...” (Isabella)

“I understand that he is strong. I won’t be careless.” (Keith)

However, there was nothing could be seen other than Keith nodded at Isabella who didn’t say anything.



We left the center of the stadium and then we sat on seats that the Beast King prepared. It was easy to watch the match because the seating were a bit high. There were protective walls. Therefore, it would be able to prevent the after-effect of the battle.

It appeared that this location was a place for royalties and it didn't matter for us to sit there since the Beast King permitted this.

There was also a cushion made of soft material. Sitting comfortably wasn't bad at all, but...

"Hey, Sirius. I'll have you sit next to me." (Eisen)

"...Sit down." (Isabella)

It was very uncomfortable because the Beast King and Isabella made me sit between them.

I didn't really dislike both of them, but... I couldn't stay calm.

Mea, who was talking with the ladies while she was on Hokuto's back, became a bit jealous.

"Now, will my son win...?" (Eisen)

"Don't you believe in your son?" (Sirius)

"I believe in my son's ability. However, the strength that I feel from your disciple, Reus, is not losing to my son. As for my son, I don't want him to display an unshapely fight." (Eisen)

He was very gentle toward her daughter, but severe to his son.

When I thought about it, Keith was also the heir, so it might be natural for the father to be strict.

Then... how about the mother?

"...If he loses, he'll be punished." (Isabella)

It seemed that both of them were like a Sparta.

Keith, who confronted Reus in the stadium, trembled because of Isabella's words.



The rule of the match was decided last night. The condition of winning and losing was whenever one of them was unable to fight, or if the opponent acknowledged defeat.

At the moment, both of them confronted with a certain distance but they were not holding weapon in hands yet.

It would very dangerous if they fought with usual weapons. Thus, the weapons were said to be prepared by the Beast King. For that reason, the greatsword which was Reus partner was place near my feet.

“Hey Reus, take this.” (Keith)

Keith threw a greatsword brought in by two soldiers and handed it over, but for some reason, his weapon was a large battleaxe... or a halberd was also thrown at Reus.

Reus grabbed both weapons in midair with both hands while tilting his head, and he nodded after lightly swinging the greatsword.

“Yeah... it’s lighter than my partner, but it’s not bad. By the way, Keith-sama, why did you give me your weapon?” (Reus)

“You can just call me Keith. You also can use normal speech. Now, I am the opponent who fights you, and status doesn’t matter. Anyway, I handed over my weapons because I want you to verify if there is any trick put on it.” (Reus)

“Is that so? Well... yeah, there is no problem, Keith!” (Reus)

Reus smiled after saying those words. He swung the halberd and confirmed there was nothing on it. He, then, threw it back to Keith.

I see... I thought that he was a strange man because when it involved his sister, but it seemed that he valued decorum.

When the Beast King who sat by my side saw the scene, he made a small complement. Since it was a situation where the king himself explained, it might be a bit extravagant.

“The weapon’s blade is completely blunt. I can’t say that they would be safe from each other’s abilities, but the risk should have decreased.” (Eisen)

“Perhaps those two would be able to endure a single direct hit. However, I think that weapon can’t handle Reus’ strength.” (Sirius)

“I could say the same thing about my son, but it can’t be helped. Shall we stop them if the weapon breaks?” (Eisen)

“...He has a hand-to-hand fighting technique that I thought. There is no need to stop them.” (Isabella)

“I see. Since I also teach Reus hand-to-hand technique, he should be alright even if the weapon breaks.” (Sirius)

“Really? If that’s the case, let’s do it as you like.” (Eisen)

“...Sirius-san, even though he is sitting between those two, he feels completely alright, isn’t it?” (Reese)

“Yes, he splendidly blends in.” (Fia)

“Sirius-sama is a proof that he has no problem to behave like royalties.” (Emilia)

Nope... In this situation, I thought of myself more like a parent rather than a royalty.

This seemed like a chat from the outside, but I focused on the stadium since the match of the two was about to start.



“Let’s do this, Reus.” (Keith)

“Ouh! Dorashaaaa–!” (Reus)

They jumped out almost at the same time, swung their weapons and when it hit each other, it created an extreme roaring sound.

It made me wonder if the outrageous match would continue as it was, but the one that struggle for a moment and being sent off was... Reus.

“It can’t be!? Reus is losing!” (Reese)

“I think that their strength are almost equal. I guess that it is probably because of the speed of stepping in.” (Emilia)

“The sword that Reus is using is a borrowed thing. He is probably not used to it after all. But, he hasn’t given up yet.” (Sirius)

Reus, who got out of the halberd’s range because of the momentum, rotated on the spot without dissipating it, and he swung the sword with full power.

Keith wielded his weapon while stepping forward to pursue, but Reus’ sword was slightly faster even though he came after being blown off, and this time, Keith was overpowered and blown off.

“Kuh... I have never been pushed this far since the younger days. But, I won’t lose for the sake of my sister!” (Keith)

“As Aniki’s disciple, I can’t be defeated!” (Reus)

“You! Is your Aniki more important than my sister!?” (Keith)

“Don’t say something that I don’t understand!” (Reus)

Even when the difficult conversations continued, the match was still going on.

Reus probably already grasped the sensation of the sword and this time he wasn’t blown off as he didn’t lose during the struggle. After that, they kept hitting weapons while holding on their spot.

One swing, two swings... and when the number of swings was ten, they brandished their weapons in order to intersect each other.

““Ooooo—!”” (Reus/Keith)

Due to the blows loaded with full power which were simultaneously unleashed, both weapons went beyond limits and the weapons were finally broken. Numerous broken pieces flew toward the spectator’s seat.

The beastkin who were watching were hurriedly avoiding it, but there was a considerably big broken pieces flying toward us. I tried to knock it down with [Magnum] but the Beast King and Isabella extended their arms faster than me...

“That fool... What is he going to do if it hits Mary?” (Eisen)

“...It’s going to be a punishment later.” (Isabella)

They stopped it by grabbing with bare hands as if catching insects. Incidentally, the future of Keith was fixed to go to hell.

Although they weren’t able to use weapons anymore, they weren’t stopping even when they were slightly injured by the broken pieces. Throwing away the broken weapon, they were hitting each other with punches.

The shock waves caused by the colliding fists were tremendous. It held strength that made dust flew around the two of them.

“A man who get close to my sister must have both physical and mind! Show me your seriousness!” (Keith)

“You don’t have to tell me that!” (Reus)

They threw punches without stopping while shouting. Sometimes, it hit the body but it didn’t become a fatal blow, so the fight between the two went on for a while.

It was a battle that seemed almost equal, but it might be cause of the difference in years or spirit... the number of Reus’ punches gradually decreased and it became a defensive match for him.

Then... the balance was finally collapsed.

“This is the end.” (Keith)

Reus’ defense was broken by a fist blow and it created a fatal gap.

Without missing that momentary gap created, Keith instantly kicked out like a spear and pierced Reus’ abdomen.

However...

“!? The response...” (Keith)

“I’m here!” (Reus)

The Reus, who Keith pierced through, was actually an afterimage produced by mana.

In that gap, Reus went around behind Keith, wrapped his hands around Keith's waist, and...

"Dorashaaaa-!" (Reus)

"Uuu... oooo!" (Keith)

Reus lifted himself as if drawing a bridge and he settled it with a splendid backdrop.

As Keith was hit from the back of the head to the ground, a shock occurred resembled a small earthquake. His upper body was buried in the ground and turned into a stunning object.

It was a blow that could make people die, but whether it was due to instinct or trained experience and body, Keith protected his head with arms, so he seemed to have avoided fatal injuries. I confirmed his survival after feeling his mana flow through [Search].

"Hmm, your disciple uses bold and splendid techniques." (Eisen)

"To be honest, I also didn't expect that." (Sirius)

"...It looks interesting." (Isabella)

Nevertheless, I thought that it was brilliant to instantly use [Mirage] that I thought, but I didn't expect that he would use wrestling technique learned from Shisou.

It was a dangerous technique to be used by an amateur, but Reus had learned the trick after receiving it many times from Shishou. He asked me couple of times on how to do it, so I was wondering whether he was interested in pro wrestling.

By the way, it was a technique with various coping methods, but it seemed that Keith, who was disturbed after seeing an afterimage for the first time, was brilliantly thrown with the technique.

In the quiet battle ground where Keith was defeated, Reus slowly stood up and waved at us.

“It is frustrating, but my son is totally out of luck.” (Eisen)

“...He has to train again.” (Isabella)

The son was defeated and it was supposed to be uninteresting, but the Beast King didn't only admit defeat, he also had a fearless smile. It showed how tolerant he was.

Isabella still kept strict look at Keith, but it seemed that she had no complaint against Reus' victory.

“Both sides displayed a praiseworthy fight. The winner of this match is the adventurer, Reus!” (Eisen)

Even though the prince of the country was knocked down, the beastkin honored Reus with applause by the declaration of the Beast King.

This match was merely for displaying abilities and that was told beforehand. It didn't involve the country or honor.

But... that match was just a preliminary match.

“...I'm next.” (Isabella)

As Isabella slowly got up, she unleashed the sense of intimidation that she had been holding down and slowly looked at me.

We hadn't engaged our hands yet, but she already considered me as a warrior, and I also believed that she was strong.

The real fight would begin from now on.



The Match Result

Reus vs Keith

The deciding technique was... Shishou's Backdrop.

✂By the way, a backdrop is a common technique of hitting opponent from the back of

their head by gripping opponent waist from the back and lift them up by drawing a bridge.



Rejected Material

During the match between Reus and Keith...

“Good luck, Onii-chan! Reus-Oniichan too, good luck!” (Mea)

“Uoohh! I was cheered by my sister, and not the enemy!” (Keith)

“Guh!? His movement has changed!” (Reus)

“Reus! When the match is over, Sirius-sama’s brushing and meals are waiting!” (Emilia)

“Uoohhh! Here I come!” (Reus)

Why... why I couldn’t feel a sense of tension even though they were fighting hard?



Presenting Hokuto – ‘What If’ version (Author: It is unknown whether this story is happened or not)

Hokuto-kun was adored by Mary.

She liked the feel of Hokuto-kun’s fur maybe because it felt unusual.

“Hokuto-sama is fluffy even today.” (Mea)

“...Woof.” (Hokuto)

He didn’t dislike children, so he didn’t mind hugging, but... there were times when it was a little annoying.

The reason was...

“How about this, Mary!? My tail is fluffy too, you know?” (Eisen)

“No, no, rather than Oyaji’s tail, my tail is younger. My tail is only for Mary. Just so you know, you can touch as much as you want.” (Keith)

Those two adults were not only making noise nearby, but they were also restlessly wondering around him.

Hokuto-kun was in a rather difficult situation because he couldn’t shake of a girl like Mary.

“Hokuto-sama’s is better. Otou-san and Onii-chan can try touching it and you will understand.” (Mea)

“Hmmm? That’s true–... guhuul!” (Eisen)

“Well, let me touch–... guhaa!?” (Keith)

“...Why did Hokuto-sama beat Otou-san and Onii-chan?” (Mea)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto-kun didn’t allowed people to touch him without permission, regardless of children.

When Hokuto-kun saw the father and the son fell down because of his paw, he feels satisfied when things got quiet.

A few minutes later...

“...What are you doing?” (Sirius)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

As expected, the Master was a bit angry.

Moreover...

“Hokuto-sama is fluffy after all.” (Mea)

“This time, I will avoid Hundred-sama’s blow and I will touch you!” (Eisen)

“I will not get caught up this time!” (Keith)

The number of entourage had increased.

Chapter 123

Inner Instinct

“I did it, Aniki!” (Reus)

The battle was decided with a splendid backdrop. After that, Reus got up and gave a shout of victory.

I understood that he was happy, but the one whom he had defeated was a prince, so it was troubling if he displayed too much happiness.

I got up from the seat and went down to the battleground with Isabella and called for Reus.

“Congratulations, Reus. But, please get him out now.” (Sirius)

“Aah, yes. Are you alright, Keith?” (Reus)

Reus ran toward Keith, whose upper body was buried in the ground while his lower body popped out like a comedy skit. He grabbed Keith’s leg and pulled it out at once.

As Keith was rescued from the ground as if being pulled out like vegetables, he couldn’t tell what was happening for a moment, but he seemed remember after looking at Reus’ figure and the surroundings.

“I see. I... lost.” (Keith)

“You were seriously being done, how’s your body?” (Sirius)

“Hmmm. It’s not a big deal compared to mother’s training. Rather...” (Keith)

“...You need more training.” (Isabella)

“Mother!? That is... that is—...” (Keith)

He seemed would have it hard after the match.

Keith was hardened and sweating like a waterfall as Isabella stood behind without making a sound.

It seemed the training was about to start at any time soon, but Isabella didn't do anything. She just quietly looked at her son.

"Uhhh... mother?" (Keith)

"...It wasn't amusing no matter who won just now. Do you understand why did you lost?" (Isabella)

"Yes, I understand. It seems that I had lost my cool, and then I became careless and impatience." (Keith)

"Good. After this... become a target practice for that technique of the moment ago." (Isabella)

"...Yes." (Keith)

Isabella seemed to like the backdrop technique.

Reus poked Keith's shoulder to comfort him since Keith made a scared faced because of the hell waiting after.

"Even if you are lifted, you'll get by if you calmly move. For example, you hang your feet the moment you are lifted up." (Reus)

"Is that with the precondition of me going to get it!? But... I will remember." (Keith)

I had a subtle feeling that he was comforting Keith, but anyhow, the relationship of those two had deepened after they fought each other once. Well... there were many things happening but it all turned well.

I casually touched Keith and performed [Scan], and it seemed there were no injuries.

As I was relieved and glad that he was strong, Reese also came down to the battlefield and treated them.

"I'm glad that Reus and Keith-sama only have small injuries. I'll treat you right away." (Reese)

“No, I’m fine. If I endure a bit with this degree of injury–...” (Keith)

“That’s not good! It will be difficult if the scars remained. Even if you don’t like it, I will treat you. Reus!” (Reese)

“I told you I don’t need it–... wha-what are you doing, bastard!?” (Keith)

“Just give up, Keith. It’s useless to go against Reese-ane when it comes to injuries.” (Reus)

Keith’s treatment was forcibly done as he was strangled by Reus.

As I was looking at such a noisy scene, Isabella came close to me and pointed at the center of the battlefield.

“Well then... now is our turn. Shall we?” (Isabella)

At that time, although it was only a bit, Isabella was laughing.

That didn’t make people think that she had two children. It was a fascinating smile coming from a beautiful woman that wouldn’t stop attracting man, but it was spectacularly offset by the sense of intimidation and bloodlust that were released as well.

Since I wanted the end the match soon, I looked at the audience seat for those two who had completed the treatment, but Reus was looking at Isabella with a serious expression.

“Aniki. I’d like to fight Isabella once. Is that alright?” (Reus)

“I don’t mind. How about you, Isabella-sama?” (Sirius)

“...It’s fine.” (Isabella)

Isabella’s response was slow, but as she nodded at Reus, she directed her eyes to the Beast King who was looking toward our direction.

After receiving the gaze, the Beast King had a little talked with Emilia and threw the greatsword, which was Reus’ partner. That greatsword was quite heavy, but the Beast King threw it easily with one hand.

While standing at the center of the battlefield, Isabella confirmed Reus had picked up his thrown partner and she lightly muttered.

“Are you sure...?” (Isabella)

“Uhm... Aniki?” (Reus)

“It’s fine. Do it with everything you have.” (Sirius)

When I told Reus that he could do his best, he was hesitated since walls could be easily cut if he swung the greatsword with full power.

However, that was a pointless worry. It was because he already understood with instinct that the opponent was superior.

“Fight her with the feeling when you fight against me.” (Sirius)

“...Ouu!” (Reus)

Although it took some time to reach this point, Reus’ weapon wasn’t a wooden sword anymore, but it was a mock battle with real weapon.

After reaffirming the readiness, Reus headed to the center of the battlefield. He, then, set the greatsword and confronted Isabella.

“You can come to me... at any time.” (Isabella)

“...” (Reus)

While concentrating, Reus quietly nodded. He brought the sword higher as he arranged the breathing. As he waited for the gap of the opponent, Isabella slightly lowered her waist and just waiting. She might want to let him made the first move.

To be honest, instead of saying that he wouldn’t attack her well, Reus’ ‘Single Strike Ultimate Destruction Sword Style’ was an offensive swordsmanship.

The opponent was probably waiting because it was a technique that could cut people into half. Plus, he had trained to make it possible.

The glancing continued for a while, but since Reus remembered that he was allowed

to practice with an opponent who had better abilities, he made his decision and leaped out.

“Dorashaaaa–!” (Reus)

Reus leaped out with a momentum that crushed the ground. Reus didn't step only once on the ground, but he leaped out while threading the ground several times. That kind of movement should be able to instantly respond to any kind of movement made by the opponent. That was why he maintained his feet on the ground.

However, Isabella didn't tremble even a little even though Reus approached from the front. Just before the swung down greatsword accelerated... Isabella disappeared.

“To the right!?” (Reus)

It could be seen that Isabella turned to the right at the speed that could make afterimage, but it looked like she disappeared from the front of Reus.

He seemed able to catch the position by the instinct and the kinetic vision forged when he fought against me.

He forcibly changed the trajectory of the sword swung down, and he tried to mow down Isabella who went around the sword, but...

“...You have good eyes.” (Isabella)

“!?” (Reus)

Isabella immediately gave a kick and it was faster than Reus' sword.

However, Reus had experienced such things many times in mock battles with me. Reus gave up swinging the sword and then, he twisted his body while pulling back the sword in a shortest distance and switched to defense mode.

Thanks to that, the defense was in time, but it might because of receiving an intense shock with an unstable posture, the sword was repelled and he was blown toward the audience seat.

Nevertheless, Reus didn't give up after collapsing due to the kick. He stood up, but... Isabella disappeared once again.

“Where...” (Reus)

“I like... when you are not giving up.” (Isabella)

When Reus caught Isabella’s figure once again, she went around behind and wrapped her hands on Reus’ waist.

Could it be... a backdrop?

She planned to do it on her son—... No, she was just curious, so she probably wanted to try.

But, Reus had eaten that technique many times from Shishou, so he knew how to deal with it—...

“That technique... guhuu!?” (Reus)

Reus probably tried to put his hands or legs on the opponent’s body, but even with that, Isabella’s backdrop was bursting faster.

During the time with Shishou, it was slowly done because she was half playing. However, in the case of Isabella, it was released with an overwhelming speed and it seemed that the coping couldn’t make it in time.

The result was... Reus’ upper body was buried in the ground. He was in the same situation with Keith.

While Isabella made a satisfying expression as she had made a new object, Keith ran up to Reus in panic.

“...Yeah. Not a bad technique.” (Isabella)

“Are-are you alright, Reus!?” (Keith)

“Guh... buhaa!? I-I’m alright.” (Reus)

Nevertheless, Reus escaped from that by himself. He stood up even when the body was staggering. To sum up Reus’ sturdiness, it was a blow lighter than Shishou’s.

“I still... can do this... guhaa!?” (Reus)

“Yes, you can’t do it anymore.” (Reese)

Even so, since Reus had his head cut a bit and was shedding blood, as the doctor, Reese, entered and stopped him, she forcibly treat his face with a mass of water.

Isabella, who was watching such a situation, made a smile that she showed even before the match while pointing at Reus.

“...You passed.” (Isabella)

“Kuh... It can’t be helped then. I will admit it.” (Keith)

“Eh? Aahh...” (Reus)

Reus, who was liberated from water, was puzzled by the sudden rebut, but it seemed that he was accepted in regard of his fighting capabilities.

“Don’t misunderstand! I only forgave you for approaching my sister! But, as my sister’s boyfriend, I won’t–...” (Keith)

“No, I already have a lover, so I don’t plan to do that. Aniki also has lovers, you know?” (Reus)

“What!?” (Keith)

“...” (Isabella)

To begin with, Keith seemed to challenge because he couldn’t forgive the man who tried to get close to Mea, so with this, they shouldn’t recklessly act anymore.

Unlike Keith, Isabella seemed to understand the situation to a certain extent, but...

“But... I’m not done yet with you. So, shall we fight?” (Isabella)

As expected, she wouldn’t admit unless I fought her.

After confirming that Reese had returned to the audience seat once the treatment of Reus and Keith had ended, I stood before Isabella, who was waiting at the center of the battleground, since I still had no intention to refuse the match.

“I am ready for this, so you can start at any time.” (Sirius)

“...Sure.” (Isabella)

After quietly nodded, when Isabella turned toward to where her husband was sitting, the Beast King declared with a loud voice.

“Begin!” (Eisen)



Since we weren't killing each other, the weapon that I brought in this fight was only the wooden knife given by Shishou.

Anyway, even though this knife was made of wood, it was far more robust than the ones made of ores. Moreover, it was a mysterious existence since it was sharper than the mithril knife when it was loaded with mana. However, it could be used as an ordinary sturdy knife if I didn't put mana on the blade, so it was suitable for mock battles. There were various other functions, but since I wasn't using them, I would omit it for now.

Besides, Isabella was fighting with empty hands. During the time with Reus, I was convinced and I expected she would use her body as weapons.

“...Aren't you going to come?” (Isabella)

The match had already began by the declaration of the Beast King, but we didn't move even one step and kept staring.

Isabella was fast enough to instantaneously decide the match, so it could be like Reus all over again if I poorly attacked. If it was simply the speed, she was probably faster than me.

“Well, this time, it's from me... I'm going.” (Isabella)

Unlike Reus, who crashed the ground and jumped out, Isabella's move was a quiet move that didn't make any sound.

It was completely like a teleportation when she appeared in front of me and gave a punch, but... I caught it with my palm from the front.

“...Have you finished warming up?” (Isabella)

I instantaneously strengthened the physical ability with [Boost]. Although the impression was like receiving a shock... the blow was lighter than I expected.

Even if it was just with a forged body, since it was fragile on the whole, the weight of the blow was a bit light. Perhaps her strength was about two thirds of Reus. Nevertheless I wondered if there was nearly twice as much difference as me due to the racial differences.

By the way, as for direct hit, it looked like I could manage it somehow since I was able to stop with my palm.

That was for the time being only though.

Isabella merely laughed after hearing my words that sounded like a provoke.

“Of course. Shall I... raise the speed?” (Isabella)

“Just to be sure, how much the speed just now?” (Sirius)

“...It’s only half.” (Isabella)

That might be problematic... before pulling back, Isabella aimed at my face with the other hand, so I tilted my neck to avoid.

As I twisted my body like a flow, I repelled a kick unleashed with a wooden knife, but it was consecutively followed by her tiger tail, and since I couldn’t stop the blow, I bend to avoid it.

Hmm... that was brilliant. Besides limbs, the tail could be used as a splendid weapon.

“More... I’m coming!” (Isabella)

“Me too!” (Sirius)

As the opponent’s speed increased, I also activated [Boost] to maximum. I handled the attack that the speed continued to rise further by returning with fist, twisted the body, leaped, and crouched.

Although Isabella's speed wasn't up to [Mirage] speed, an afterimage seemed possible with the momentum. Even though my thought could keep up, the response speed of the body wasn't able to keep up.

Even so, with accumulated experience, I was somehow managed to deal with it by anticipating with [Multi Tasking].

As the speed rose, the changed had begun to occur in Isabella.

"Hehe... Haha... Ahaha! It's coming... it's coming! It's the first time in a while!" (Isabella)

Her thin eyes that were sleepy were opened wide. Even her murmur that seemed disappearing also changed to a loud laugh.

Were adrenaline secreted by the match? She seemed to be high with a complete excited state. I was surprised by too much change and it was where I couldn't avoid attacks.

Anyway, those who quiet and rarely moved were extreme people.

"Hmm... It's been ten years since I saw that appearance. Is he an opponent of that degree?" (Eisen)

"Oyajii, what happened with Mother?" (Keith)

"Isabella's emotion explodes as the fighting instinct increases. As you can see, that's her true nature. In other words, she is going all out." (Eisen)

"...Okaa-san" (Mea)

"Ahaha! You can avoid this too!" (Isabella)

While she ferociously laughed, I was unable to escape from the punches unleashed. She kept roaring while ripping my cheek a bit.

"I haven't been agitated this far since my husband! Now, show me more of your power!" (Isabella)

"It's an honor to do so!" (Sirius)

Even if she went around behind me, I avoided while creating an afterimage with [Mirage] but the kick I unleashed as a counterattack was easily avoided.

“More... more... more... show me your true power! Oh Earth, rise up! [Ground Break]” (Isabella)

As Isabella crushed the ground at the same time as chanting, the ground under my feet cracked and there were countless rocks shot up toward the sky as if a volcano erupted.

That magic... was it an intermediate magic of earth attribute that shot rocks toward sky?

Furthermore, the chanting was shortened and she skillfully using magic while unleashing attacks... she was truly an opponent that I couldn't be careless.

A rock approached my right from the bottom toward the sky, but I conversely used that rock as a foothold and avoid the magic.

“Aren't you amazing!? There is a person other than me who can do this!” (Isabella)

As Isabella declared that, she came close while kicking rocks at me as I was leaping at the height of the third floor of a castle.

However, if it was an aerial fight, I could use [Air Step].

Isabella came to me a number of times while kicking rocks, but at the same time of her kicking the rocks, I made magical scaffoldings to the extent that it wouldn't be disturbed just before the rocks intersected it and avoid the assault.

It seemed that the rocks kicked were scattered around here and there and were falling toward the audience seats, but unfortunately, I had no time to worry about it.

Well, there would be no problem if the rock fell on my companions and the Beast King.

“Hey Mary, come to your father because it's dangerous!” (Eisen)

“No, come here, Mary! If you are next to your brother, I swear that you will not be hit by a single piece of rock!” (Keith)

“I'm protecting with the wind, so don't move too much Mea-chan.” (Fia)

“Wahh... Fia-Oneesan is amazing!” (Mea)

““...” (Eisen/Keith)

I landed on the ground as the rock kicking had stopped. I tried to leap to the side immediately, but Isabella went around behind me faster than that and wrapped around her hands on my waist.

This course of event... was it a backdrop again!? She really liked that backdrop, huh?

“How about this!?” (Isabella)

“Like I will let you do it!” (Sirius)

I immediately extended my hand right above and I released [Impact] just before I was about to hit the ground.

With the shock released, our body flew even while hitting the ground. Incidentally, when I got blown up in midair, I greatly twisted my body and removed Isabella’s hands from my waist.

While she was surprised at that action, I received Isabella’s kick with both hands. And then, I grabbed the leg, created a foothold with [Air Step] and hurled her toward the wall of the battlefield.

“You are stronger than I expected! However...” (Isabella)

Isabella rearranged her posture even though she was hurled. She landed on the wall, kicked it and flew at the same time. While wielding fists, she came close to me as I landed at the center of the battlefield.

At that time, when I looked at the approaching opponent in order to anticipate her movement... she shouted with a serious expression and for the first time, she wasn’t smiling.

“For you to hold this much of power, what are you plotting when you approach my daughter!?” (Isabella)

Those words weren’t coming from a warrior... but from a mother.

The moment I heard those words, the question which had floated was resolved.



It was during the discussion last night.

It was a conversation between me and the Beast King, just before returning from the castle to the inn.

He heard from Mea that she was able to see a bit because of mana. It seemed that he wanted to thank me again, but I also had something I wanted to ask.

...Why Mea had bad eyesight?

I was wondering whether it was congenital or due to illness, and the answer given by the Beast King was...

{Mary was poisoned.} (Eisen)

Mea wasn't only loved by the family, but also those who were in the castle since she was born.

However, one year ago... a tragedy happened that Mea was poisoned.

She somehow escaped death, but because of the tragedy, her eyesight became terribly bad.

To make matters worse, she unconsciously wouldn't accept meals. Unless someone did poison tasting, she would eat after that.

She was served with poison not because of a grudge or a political conspiracy, but it was due to a mistake of a cook who was trying hard to make Mea ate delicious meals.

Although it wasn't intentional, it seemed that the chef couldn't bear the guilt, and he killed himself after that.

It was a miserable ending that no one could expect.

Since then, the surrounding became very sensitive about Mea's physical condition.

Thanks to that, Mea lived in good health without being sick or getting injured. When it was thought that the scars of the past finally faded... we came to this town.

I thought that they were overreacting when she collapsed due to mana exhaustion, but the reason was actually because of that incident.

Mea was adored to the point being sought after by everyone, but there was only a person who was calm.

That was Isabella.

She came in rush and she seemed disconcerted when Mea collapsed, but once she confirmed that Mea had narrowly escaped death, she returned to her usual.

She just stared at a far away distance even when she faced the daughter and it seemed that she repeated for days while training her son, Keith.

{I have one more question. I mean, Isabella-sama, is she always having that attitude toward Mea?} (Sirius)

{She is just clumsy. My wife is just being cute, isn't it? Hahaha!} (Eisen)

{You're saying that her action of staring is as her being clumsy, is it?} (Sirius)

Because of that, Mea was 'harshly' treated when she approached her mother. From the side, she was thought as a cold mother who didn't care much about her daughter.



However... it was completely misplaced, and the Beast King was right.

The usual Isabella was an extremely poor talker, but I was able to fully understand her personality as we collided and talked with each other. Furthermore, like in the present time, I wouldn't know her real intention if she didn't go all out.

According to the Beast king, Isabella wasn't only look for strong opponents, she also had matches against those who approached Mea.

In other words, Isabella was more concerned about her daughter than anyone else, so she tried to know the real intention when she went against them.

She trained herself in order to forge abilities for the sake of protecting her daughter.

Although she was glaring at Mea, the real intention could only be known by fighting since she was a poor talker.

Of course, there were times when she wanted to fight against strong opponents.

However, the primary reason was to confirm whether the opponent was a person worthy to approach her daughter, and... that was why I was challenged for a match in order to judge me.

“Answer me! Then, hit me with your real intention!” (Isabella)

To be honest, I didn’t have a concrete reason.

I encountered Mea by chance and I helped her since she was in trouble. It was more or less that it was just on a whim.

I didn’t think that she would feel satisfied even if I explained by mouth, so it wasn’t good for me to avoid that blow.

Although she was a difficult woman, I didn’t dislike that upright affection. Since I planned to make her as Reus’ training partner if she was fine with it, I would face her with all I had then.

I lowered my waist and I let my mana covered the whole body more carefully than usual. I swung my right hand and unleashed a blow with full strength toward the incoming Isabella.

“As a person who supposes to guide people up, I just helped a child in need!” (Sirius)

As soon as I swung the fist, an [Impact] exploded at the same time near the elbow and the swung fist was accelerated by a momentum.

The principle of punching with all strength that I was currently unleashing was close to a pile bunker, but I didn’t want to use it a lot since it gave a heavy burden even to my strengthened body.

My fist that was added with [Impact] just before the direct hit and Isabella’s fist collided with each other, and the shock was more than the impact between Reus and

Keith.

As I heard an unpleasant sound from the right arm, we got blown backward at the same time. After rolling on the ground several times, I hit the wall of the battlefield and stopped.

“That’s it!” (Eisen)

It seemed that the Beast King judged that it would involve life and death if we continued this match. He forced the match to end.

I still could fight some more, but since I was really tired, I remained leaning against the wall.

Isabella also in the same situation as me since she didn’t show the intention of getting up, but she looked satisfied maybe thanks to the fulfilling match. Although it was a very attractive smile when looking at her, it was difficult to do that because she had to fight.

“Sirius-sama!” (Emilia)

Emilia flew at the same time as the end declaration and her face looked anxious, but I told her that I was fine to calm her down.

I thought that Emilia would cry a lot since this might be her first time to see me exhausted, but... surprisingly she had a calm look.

Aah, she had grown up...

“She is an opponent who pushes Sirius-sama to this point, but it is already over for her. Please leave the rest to me. I will make her to completely yield and hold this country-...” (Emilia)

...that nature was worse than crying.

While calming the head of Emilia with left hand, I began to confirm my injury.

Hmmm... although the pain was intense, the right arm bone seemed wasn’t broken. However, I would be resting today since there was a physical fatigue due to continuous handling Isabella’s attack and a fatigue of mana exhaustion.

By the time I finished analyzing my body, all my companions were around me.

“There were few wounds, but please don’t move since I will immediately treat it.”
(Reese)

“I’m glad that you are safe. Even so, isn’t this the first time that you are tired until this much?” (Fia)

“I will handle the matters of the surrounding, so please rest for today.” (Emilia)

“I will blow away anyone who approach Aniki!” (Reus)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“It’s not that bad, so please calm down.” (Sirius)

As Reese finished the treatment while the siblings made a fuss, when I stood up while holding on Emilia’s shoulder, Isabella who stood up supported by the Beast King and Keith.

Words were no longer necessary. As Isabella came approaching and extending hand with a calm expression, I clasped that hand and shook it.

“Hmmm, it was a splendid fight. And if my wife accepts you, the people of the castle will have to completely admit you.” (Eisen)

“I didn’t think there was anyone who could fight Mother until that far. Oi, fight me when your injury is healed!” (Keith)

“I didn’t think feel that you were lying from the last words and that punch. I’m fine... with Sirius-kun.” (Isabella)

According to the Beast King words, the beastkin who were in the audience seats were surprised but they sent us generous applause.

It seemed that Keith also admitted it, and when I thought that the situation was solved with this, I noticed something strange about Mea. She was a little away from us and she was hardened with a confused expression.

The Beast King told me that it was the first time she saw Isabella to be agitated and

talkative.

Perhaps she was confused when listening to her mother's real intention since she thought that she was disliked since she was glared every time they faced each other.

It would be good if Isabella could tell her real intention here, but unfortunately the excitement was already cooled and she returned to the usual state.

She stared at Mea like always, but now that I knew the situation, she was a just a mother who was having trouble on how to talk to the daughter.

The Beast King, who cuddled next to Isabella, put his hand on her head while laughing.

"Isabella, how about you become more honest? If you can ferociously fight to that extent, it wouldn't be difficult to express to Mary, right?" (Eisen)

"But... I don't know what to say. And... I can't let her be spoiled..." (Isabella)

"It is fine if you can speak like you do with me and Keith. Like 'I love you more than anyone else!'" (Eisen)

"...That's impossible." (Isabella)

It felt like I couldn't see this going on anymore, so unintentionally gave suggestion.

"If words are impossible, express it with action. How about stroking Mea's head?" (Sirius)

"!?" (Isabella)

Whether that suggestion was a divine revelation, Isabella opened his eyes wide and stared at me.

"Hey, your intimidation is coming out, you know. Your daughter will not run away, so you can calm down, alright?" (Sirius)

"...Yes." (Isabella)

Isabella quietly nodded and approached Mea who stood still. She gently placed her hand on her daughter's head and began to slowly stroke.

“Okaa-... san?” (Mea)

“...Mary.” (Isabella)

“Y-yes. What is it?” (Mea)

“I love you.” (Isabella)

“...Really?” (Mea)

“...Yes.” (Isabella)

Although it was clumsy, she gradually started interacting like her mother.

It was a sight that reminded me when Reese reconciled with her father.

Reese looked embarrassed since she remembered the same memory as me. While Isabella kept stroking Mea’s head, she turned her face to me.

“Sirius-kun. Would you become... my daughter’s educator?” (Isabella)

Since I had a feeling that the battle between experts wouldn’t be prolonged, I deliberately requested battles between Reus and Isabella.

The result was... Reus became a wonderful someone who would put up a fight but had no chance of winning.



NG Scene

In the scene where Isabella was stroking Mea’s head.

Stroking...

“...Cute girl.” (Isabella)

“...Okaa-san” (Mea)

Stroking few more times...

“...” (Isabella)

“Ehehe...” (Mea)

Stroking some more...

“...” (Isabella)

“Uhm... Okaa-san?” (Mea)

Stroking more and more...

Stroking without stopping...

“...” (Isabella)

“Okaa-san. My head is getting hotter.” (Mea)

Stroking still...

Stroking...

“Aniki! There’s a smoke coming from Mea’s head!” (Reus)

“Reese, water!” (Sirius)



Presenting Hokuto ✂Please disregard when this part happened.

“...” (Isabella)

“...Woof.” (Hokuto)

That day, Hokuto-kun was staring at Isabella-san.

The reason was unknown, but somehow Isabella-san stood in front of Hokuto-kun.

Since he understood that the other side was a strong person, he didn't make a poor move and kept on guard.

"..." (Isabella)

"...Woof." (Hokuto)

The staring continued for several minutes, and when Isabella gently extended her hand... Hokuto-kun reflexively avoided it.

"..." (Isabella)

"...Woof." (Hokuto)

This time she reached out somewhat faster than before, but Hokuto-kun avoided it as expected.

"..." (Isabella)

"...Woof." (Hokuto)

Ssu ← the sound of reaching hand.

Ssa ← the sound of avoiding it.

"..." (Isabella)

"Woof, woof!" (Hokuto)

Ssu *Ssu* ← with both hands

Ssa *Ssa* ← evasion

"..." (Isabella)

"Woof, woof!" (Hokuto)

bababababa ← high speed reaching hands.

sasasasa ← avoiding like Dempsey (*TLN: I think it is Jack Dempsey*)

“-!” (Isabella)

“Woof!?” (Hokuto)

Since Isabella finally came closer to his body, Hokuto-kun felt great danger and ran away.

“...Beast King-sama. What does your wife want to do?” (Sirius)

“Hmm? She just wants to touch him. Well, my wife really likes cute things.” (Eisen)

A few minutes later...

Hokuto-kun came back, but...

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“...Fluffy.” (Isabella)

It seemed that he had lost since Isabella was clinging her whole body on Hokuto’s back while rubbing her cheeks on him.

Chapter 124

Those who Serve their Master

After the match with Isabella was over, not only Mea's family, we were also recognized by the beastkin who worked in the castle. Since then, we talked a lot and we returned to the [Wolf King], the inn in the town.

I was offered to stay in the castle just like yesterday, but I decided to take a rest at the inn today as well.

They were various reasons, but there was one reason why I couldn't move from the inn.

The reason was...

"Would you like to have a tea? If you need anything else, please tell me anytime."
(Emilia)

"There were few wounds, but it's no good if you overwork yourself today." (Reese)

"Shall we sing lullabies so that you can sleep soundly?" (Fia)

"I will take care of the security, so Aniki can rest without worries." (Reus)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

It might be because it was their first time seeing me tired other than training, I was confined in bed because my companions wanted me to have a rest.

I wasn't really confined by a rope or something, but there was always someone around and kept watching, so I couldn't move.

Well, even though the mana could be quickly recovered, it was certainly painful since it had been long time for me to overwork the body to the limit. I had no dissatisfaction with the current situation because I intended to take a good rest from the beginning.

Fia, who was the calmest among the disciples, curiously tilted her head while looking at me as I was sleeping in the bed.

“At any rate, it’s about the educator. I thought that you would refuse the offer since she is adored to that extent by the surrounding.” (Fia)

“Hmmm... I accepted because of that reason.” (Sirius)

After fighting with Isabella, I was invited by her to educate Mea.

It would be a trouble if I became Mea’s educator as stated by Fia, but I accepted it because there were various things to worry about.

I didn’t say anything in that place, but I guessed that it was worrisome. As Fia started asking, the siblings also were also asking me questions.

“What is Aniki concern about?” (Reus)

“Reus is right. Certainly Mea was innocent and she was a girl nobody would ignore, but I don’t think Sirius-sama has suffered so much.” (Emilia)

“It is true that the treatment was worst at the beginning, but if I leave it alone, I feel like this country itself seems to be doing it...” (Sirius)

Although it wasn’t clear if it was just only for the family, the obsession of Mea from surroundings was obviously different.

To the point that if Mea wanted a war with a neighboring country, the starting of war would casually began.

Right now, Mea was an innocent child, so it was all good, but when she grew up, if she became a woman like a noble with desires... I wouldn’t be sure what this town would be like this in the future.

Anyway, there were many troublesome matters, so I didn’t want to get involved with other people. However, I wanted to let Reus obtained more experiences with Isabella and since this was the first time being treated by a castle and when looking at ingredients that I saw for the first time, I’d like to stay a bit longer.

“The rest, even though this is a personal reason, I really want to teach Mea how to

handle mana. If she learns on how to apply [Boost] on the whole body instead of just on the eyes, I feel like she would get closer with her mother.” (Sirius)

“I also have same opinion. Although she has parents, I don’t want to see a sad looking child.” (Fia)

“Besides that, I’m lending a huge favor. Therefore, some selfishness may be permitted if Mea doesn’t dislike it.” (Sirius)

“Well. It seems Mea-chan will not dislike it if that’s the case, and I think that it will be fine even if she notices it.” (Fia)

“If there is another reason, I’m thinking of earning a lot of money here. If I successfully teach her, I can expect some rewards, right?” (Sirius)

Although I got a repatriation due to false charges, it couldn’t be said that it was enough since we consumed a lot.

With that kind of thought, I summarized the objectives while listening to the opinions of the disciples. At the same time, Emilia brewed tea and she let out a breath when I received it from her.

I guessed that she was waiting for the discussion to end. Hokuto, who was sleeping on the side of the bed, came to my chest. As I stroked his head, Reus abruptly turned a sharp look at the outside of the window.

“Aniki. Who is approaching this mansion?” (Reus)

“Hmmm... apparently it is a guest. Please invite that person.” (Sirius)

“Understood. I’m going.” (Emilia)

Since Hokuto, who was being spoiled due to the stroking, didn’t become wary, it was certain that the one that was coming here wasn’t an enemy.

While confirming the other person with [Search], I looked at Hokuto as he slovenly rubbing against my chest...

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“...You’re not being careless just because I spoil you, right?” (Sirius)

“Woof!?” (Hokuto)

He barked as if that was unexpected.

As I continued stroking Hokuto while apologizing to him, I noticed Emilia, whom I asked to fetch the guest, wasn’t moving from the spot.

“...I’m jealous.” (Emilia)

“Haa... come here.” (Sirius)

“Yes! Ehehe...” (Emilia)

When I stroked Emilia’s head who was approaching with a full smile, she was pleased while wagging her tail.

After she enjoyed it enough, she headed for the entrance to fetch the guest.

“No matter how much time has passed, that doesn’t change, huh... either when she is happy, or sad.” (Sirius)

“Ah, Emilia is properly growing up, isn’t it? Before this, she would aggressively bring her head to you, right?” (Fia)

“That’s true... by the way, why is Fia coming closer?” (Sirius)

“Oh my, I also want to be spoiled, you know. Even for adults, they would be happy when their lover caress them.” (Fia)

“...C-can I have that too?” (Reese)

“Well, the last one is me!” (Reus)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Didn’t I do it to you, just now?” (Sirius)

After that, I stroked them in order, but it felt weird to stroke a man like Reus who

became bigger than I was.

Oh well... the person himself seemed didn't care, and I also didn't mind about it. When I stroked his favorite point, he was pleased in agony.

"Ooo... Aniki, you understand it after all." (Reus)

"...What is this situation?" (??)

"No, please disregard this as usual." (Sirius)

When we turned to a different from voice that weren't coming among us, Grethe, who was guided by Emilia and came into the room, was tilting her head while staring at the sloppy looking Reus.

Tentatively, I tried to get up while pushing aside Reus, but Grethe shook as soon as I got up.

"You look tired. Don't worry about me and take a rest." (Grethe)

"Well then, if you insist. So, do you have something for us? We will go to the castle again tomorrow, but..." (Sirius)

"Yes. I came here because there was a slight emergency." (Grethe)

Her eyes looked sleepy as ever, but she seemed slightly impatience.

When I asked the details... apparently, the beastkin started to feel jealous when I was elected as Mea's educator.

"For that reason, I came to watch over because those guys may come to harass you." (Grethe)

"What's going on? That Mc... McDa-... what's his name again?" (Reus)

"It's McDatt-san. However, isn't a bit immature since he as the original educator was approved?" (Emilia)

When I accepted the offer to become the educator, Mea's current educator, McDatt, readily accepted it even though it wasn't something pleasant.

I properly told them that we wouldn't stay here long, but as Reus and Reese said, those bunch were too well known. Was this also due to Mea's charm?

To cut it short, I would like to stay here today to prepare for those guys.

"I appreciate your thought, but our companions are excellent, so you don't have to watch over us, you know?" (Sirius)

"But, I was asked by Mary-sama. I don't want to bother everyone more than anything, but I was chosen because she trusts me the most..." (Grethe)

Hmmm... it was difficult to refuse if she was directly asked by Mea. In order to respond to Mea's trust, she was starting to appeal as if she depended on it.

It made me think that maybe it wasn't necessary to refuse since she came in order to dealt with their own failure?

"If that's the case, I'll depend on you. I also want to take a break for the first time in a long while." (Sirius)

"That's right, Sirius-sama is better to take a rest some more. Please leave it to us." (Emilia)

It wasn't only Emilia, the other companions nodded as well.

As they sat at the table in the same Room, Fia deliberately asked questions and discussed about the placement of the security and where the place where Grethe went to sleep.

"Say, you are McDatt's subordinate right? Is he really giving his consent that Sirius is in charge of the education?" (Fia)

"...That's what he says." (Grethe)

"But, wasn't it hard to say when the Beast King-sama was there at that time? It seems unavoidable for that man to think that Mea-chan is cute, but he should be unwilling, right?" (Fia)

"It's alright. Since Mary-sama wants it, so he doesn't complain." (Grethe)

The outside was getting dark as we continued talking. In the night, when the adventurers and residents were starting to make noises in the bar, we were visited by a guest again.

“I’m sorry for doing this arbitrarily. Actually, there is something I’d like to ask Hokuto-sama...” (Manager)

The one appeared in front of us was the Manager of the [Wolf King].

According to the Manager, the last meeting for the information control where Hokuto could openly walk in town would be held, and it was said that he wanted Hokuto to attend the meeting.

“If they directly look at Hokuto-sama’s appearance, it will inspired those who only have heard of him through stories. I’d like to have another meetings in the future, so please participate as much as you can...” (Manager)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

Hokuto looked as if as if asking what he should do, but I told him to do whatever he wanted.

The Manager was pleased that Hokuto lightly barked after thinking for a while. It seemed that he decided to attend the meeting. The Manager didn’t only allow us to stay with cheap fee, but since he prepared a special room for us, I guessed that Hokuto was trying to fulfill his part.

The meeting was only about one to two hours, but it seemed to be done in a place slightly away from the inn. After the manager told that he would wait at the entrance of the inn, he went out.

“Hmm... I don’t think that they will do anything to Hokuto, but I think that it is better for someone to go with him.” (Sirius)

“In that case, I’ll go. So, please rest, Sirius.” (Fia)

“Since Fia-san is an Elf, isn’t better if a human like me goes there too?” (Reese)

Emilia probably didn’t want to stay away from me and since Reus was still tired from the fight of the day, he also would remain here.

It seemed easy to be targeted by fools, but if combining the strength of Hokuto and the two who could use spirit magic, the danger was basically equal to none. Therefore, I could safely send them off. Well, for starters, the surrounding beastkin wouldn't allow anyone to put their hands on Hokuto.

After getting ready, when I was watching them going out of the room, Hokuto, who went out last, barked toward the siblings.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Yes, please leave this place to us.” (Emilia)

“Grethe-san is also here, so it's going to be fine.” (Reus)

Perhaps, he was asking them about me.

Hokuto nodded in satisfaction when the siblings confidently responded, and then, he headed for the meeting.

“Excuse me, Sirius-sama. I will take my leave because I need to wash the dishes. If there is anything, please call me as usual.” (Emilia)

“I'm going to stay in the living room since Aniki won't be able to rest if I stay here.” (Reus)

“Well then, I will look around the mansion at once.” (Grethe)

As the noisy room was suddenly became quiet, I took a deep breath and put my upper body which I had raised in the bed.

The siblings were only one the other side of the wall, but I thought that it had been a while for me to be in the situation where I was alone.

I would be busy with Mea's education starting from tomorrow. Although it was still early, I thought that it was better to take a day off for today.

I closed my while wrapping myself in a blanket.



— ??? —

While losing myself in the dark of the night, I walked on the mansion while killing presence as much as I could.

It was worth the trouble to deliberately shred their fighting power.

In order to separate Hundred Wolves-sama, who had acute sense, I thought that my luck was better than expected.

The strong Silver Wolf man had left, but he slowly moved away maybe because he was tired from today's fight. If this, by chance, would come to a battle, I could do a lot of things though.

In other words, the real fighting power left in the mansion was... Emilia alone.

Time was limited, but I didn't need to be impatient.

Since I informed in advance, it wouldn't be weird if I was outside.

While pretending to watch the surrounding of the mansion, I took out the sleeping pills from the chest...

"...Eh? Why do I have this tool... Wrong, it's mine." (??)

I had a doubt about the sleeping pills taken out, but it might be due to mind.

This was... oh yes. If I put the pills on a fire, a slight white smoke came out. It was a special sleeping pill that put people who inhaled it in a deep sleep. Since the smoke had no smell, it was hard to detect, but I should be careful not to breath it in.

As I activated a small [Flame] on the fingertips, I brought the pill close. I threw it away from the window of a vacant room after hearing a dissolving sound.

Perhaps, when I threw four pills, the smoke would fill the house.

I walked around the mansion while pretending to watch it. I threw in the last pill and hid behind a rock that was a little away.

“With this, I should wait until the count of 300.” (??)

The smoke was immediately effective, but it became ineffective after a while... when it was so, that would be the time to go back to the mansion.

While slowly counting, I quietly waited for smoke to be ineffective.

In the meantime, I kept have an uncertain feeling, but... it was due to mind as expected.

This was... the right thing to do.



When I returned to the mansion after the smoke became harmless, Reus was sleeping while sitting on a chair in the living room. I tried to approach him but I didn't expect anything would happen. I guessed the effect of the smoke seemed to be enough.

I went passed him and enter the room. I was able to confirm that my target was quietly falling asleep in the bed.

The light was turned off. When I tried to carefully listen in the room with only the moonlight poured in from the window, there were... two regulated breathing of sleeping people.

Emilia, who was the only fighting power, was sleeping with her face on the target's chest. I felt something wrong for her to return to her master, but I guessed she was tired and fell asleep here.

“...She looks calm, isn't it?” (??)

Even though she was sleeping, her sleeping face was very restful maybe because she felt the smell of her master.

I only knew them for a short time, but I knew well that Emilia really liked him.

She served the Master as an attendant... and she knew the joy of supporting him.

I was also the same.

So, I had... no choice but to do this.

I understood myself that I was being hasty.

But, he was an opponent who could equally fight against Isabella, but he was now exhausted.

“Don’t worry... this won’t be painful.” (??)

After this, I just need to stab a special needle on the neck of the sleeping target.

If it was about the pain, it wouldn’t wake him up, and he should die while sleeping.

When I tried to extend my hand to the chest to take out that needle... my finger stopped.

Everything was prepared, but why I still felt confused?

This was also for Mary-sama’s... —sama’s sake... eh?

Something hazy... again...

“Uh, uhh... nothing... wrong.” (??)

Yes. I... wasn’t doing anything wrong.

‘So, let’s finish this quickly.’

If I quickly returned and looked at Mary-sama’s smile... surely it would be fine.

And then, the moment when I put my hand on the chest, a breeze of wind suddenly blew around me.

When I thought... about the wind inside a room, I wasn’t able to move.

The reason was...

“...Please don’t move.” (Emilia)

While reflecting the moonlight with the silver hair, she... Emilia went around behind me and put a knife on my throat.

She should have inhale the smoke, but why she still woke up?

Emilia opened his mouth with sharp eyes to me who was confused with the sudden situation.

“Tell me what were you trying to do... Grethe-san.” (Emilia)



— Emilia —

“Tell me what were you trying to do... Grethe-san.” (Emilia)

Sirius-sama said... it would probably happened today, and it was exactly as expected.

Although it was a bit unexpected that the enemy was Grethe-san, she was my enemy if she was targeting Sirius-sama.

I quickly went around her back during the gap when Grethe-san was putting her hands on the chest. She seemed unable to hide her surprise to me who stuck a knife at her neck.

“...You should have inhale the smoke, but why you are still waking up?” (Grethe)

“That’s easy, it is because we didn’t inhale it. More importantly, do not deny that you were aiming at Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

Apparently, Sirius-sama always keep track Grethe-san’s movement with [Search]. Then, he used [Call] when he felt an unnatural movement outside and a slight magic invocation.

After that, I regulated a wind around the bed with magic and protected it from the smoke based on Sirius-sama’s instruction.

Sirius-sama’s who was pretending to be asleep, got up from the bed, and told Reus to wake up through [Call]. By the way, Reus was also pretending to sleep in the living room.

“How could you prepare such a precise response? Even though the smoke can’t be seen well in a dark room...” (Grethe)

“Well, at first, I thought about the possibility of explosion and arson, but thanks to Emilia’s ability, the extent of your work could be identified. Human probably wouldn’t know it, but the Silver Wolfkin has sharp nose.” (Sirius)

At that time, when I was about to inform the faint smell that I noticed, Sirius-sama reported the other side’s presence at the same time.

Although it was depended on the situation, it seemed that Sirius-sama became helpless many times because of gas in the previous life.

“Sirius-sama had been keeping eyes on Grethe-san from the beginning since you were suspicious.” (Emilia)

“Aah yes, that was because I felt the same air from her as I was used to be in the past. It is a specific air of those who kill for a living.” (Sirius)

“Then, why did you let me do it?” (Grethe)

“From the situation where you deliberately showed yourself in front of us, it seemed that your target was only me. So, I prepared a trap to see your true character.” (Sirius)

After that, he pretended to be sleeping while knowing the danger to lure Grethe-san.

Although I was somewhat unwilling to have the possibility of any kind, it was a secret that I was happy because of that pretending, I could smell Sirius-sama’s odor to the fullest.

“Haa... I almost inhaled it.” (Reus)

“You were consuming too much oxygen when it was limited. By knowing this, why don’t you try to train on that?” (Sirius)

And then, Reus, who had stopped breathing until the smoke disappears, also came into the room.

However, unlike us who were protected by the wind, he looked a little sleepy maybe because he was affected by the smoke.

“Now... will you tell me the person who asked you to target me and the reason for it?” (Sirius)

“Grethe-san. Please put out the hand on your chest and raised both hands.” (Emilia)

“...Understood.” (Grethe)

Grethe-san slowly put out her hand of the chest, but since her fingers were pinching a small manastone, I repelled it away into the midair.

“Is that a magic formation of explosion!? Reus!” (Sirius)

“Ouu!” (Reus)

After the manastone was further repelled by Sirius-san’s [Impact], it broke through the window since Reus swung the sword and a big explosion occurred over the mansion.

Although the window broke, I guess that it would be better instead of the interior got messed up.

“Was that used for a suicide mission or as a diversion?... Anyway, that was a good reflex, Emilia.” (Sirius)

“No, it’s still too early.” (Emilia)

That was because Grethe-san ran away when I was distracted by the current uproar.

Grethe-san’s blood stuck on my knife maybe because she was forcing her way while having her neck shallowly cut.

Grethe-san, who ran away, had already jumped out of the broken window, but still...

“Please forgive me, Sirius-sama. Could you leave this matter to me?” (Emilia)

“...The current you can handle her somehow, but don’t be careless.” (Sirius)

“Yes! Reus, I entrust Sirius-sama to you.” (Emilia)

“Leave it to me! Nee-chan too, you be careful.” (Reus)

I jumped out of the window even though I was delayed, but Grethe-san had already jumped over the fence that surrounded the [Wolf King].

She was faster than I expected, but I could catch up with her. Even though I had lost the sight of her appearance, I remembered the smell of the blood, so there was no way she could run away.

I immediately activated [Boost] to the limit. I flew up high in response to the wind and kicked the scaffolding created by the [Air Step]. Then, I accelerated all at once to the direction that Grethe-san escaped.

Unlike Sirius-sama, I couldn't keep flying in the sky, and I couldn't steadily fly like Fia-san.

"But... if it is a momentary acceleration... [Wind Dash]!" (Emilia)

By further manipulating the wind to reduce the resistance, I flew away while splitting the air like an arrow. When I showed this way of flying, I heard from Sirius-sama that this resembled a glider.

She seemed to choose alleyways with many blind spots and back streets with few pedestrian just to shake off my pursuit, but that choice was a mistake. I knew Grethe-san position by the smell. Unlike her running along the road, I was approaching fast and straight from the sky.

I easily surpassed the enemy who ran the narrow alleys and then I descended by reducing the speed with the wind. Grethe-san was stunned by surprise as I stood in front of her.

"-!? How...?" (Grethe)

"I can't let you run away since you were targeting my precious Master." (Emilia)

"...I... see." (Grethe)

She supposed to know this since she adored Mea-sama, right?

If this situation was the other way around, Grethe-san would never let her enemies to get away by all means.

I guessed that it was no longer possible for her to escape.

Like me, Grethe-san was also preparing for battle by pulling out a knife, but I had

something to ask before that.

“I have a question. Why... are you targeting Sirius-sama?” (Emilia)

“...It is for Mary-sama’s sake.” (Grethe)

“That’s weird. Although Sirius-sama didn’t know her from the beginning, he taught Mea-sama how to handle mana, but I don’t think that he did something that makes you want to assassinate him, right?” (Emilia)

“That man is not suitable for Mary-sama. It’s just that... he will become a hindrance to...” (Grethe)

“That’s why-...” (Emilia)

“I’m not wrong.” (Grethe)

As expected, it was no good.

Certainly the jealousy of the castle people was amazing, but it was weak and not to the point of targeting Sirius-sama.

If I predicted based on Grethe-san’s words, there were people who were troubled by Sirius-sama educating Mea... I guessed that was the reason.

It was just a speculation, but let’s inform Sirius-sama just to be sure.

As I touched the choker’s magic stone and activated [Call], I told Sirius-sama about my presumption.

“...That’s how it is. Moreover, the condition of Grethe-san is weirder than usual. In some respect, she sound absent-minded, but I feel that some part of the conversation haven’t been established yet.” (Emilia)

{Yes, I also feel the same. She seems like someone who is being manipulated, but that’s because the person herself has the real intention... I have a feeling that this concerns a specific matter. Indeed, it looks... like a hint, isn’t it?} (Sirius)

“Hint... Sirius-sama... I have a request-...” (Emilia)

{Do you want to secure her alive? I also want to investigate further, so I have no reason to stop you. Do as you please.} (Sirius)

“Thank you very much.” (Emilia)

{I will also contact Reese and Fia, but don't overdo it... Come back safe and sound.}
(Sirius)

Sirius-sama watched over us like a child, but now he firmly entrusted to us.

Thinking that I wanted to respond to that trust, it surged up the strength in me.

“What are you talking from a while ago? Could it be... a report?” (Grethe)

“Do you have time to mind about that? Moreover, Grethe-san... I will not harm you. So, would you surrender to us?” (Emilia)

“I can't do that. It was impossible because there were three of you, but I can somehow manage this if you are the only opponent here.” (Grethe)

Those words were... not a bluff.

Sirius-sama said that I shouldn't be careless, and even from my point of view, Grethe-san wasn't a person I could afford to be careless.

She was surprised about flying in the sky, but that was only because it was something unusual, and... it didn't have affect on her ability.

“I will also get rid of you if you get in my way. So... leave.” (Grethe)

“Understood. Well, then...” (Emilia)

I would never forgive those who target Sirius-sama.

However, if Grethe-san died for whatever reason, Mea-sama would be sad.

Since Sirius-sama was concerned about Mea-sama whom he taught once, he would be sad if she was sad.

“I will secure you with all my strength.” (Emilia)

So I... just had to do my best for now.



Presenting Hokuto

During the time when Grethe-san was scattering the sleeping pills...

Hokuto-kun, together with Reese-chan and Fia-san, attended a meeting where the residents of Arbitray gathered.

“Ooh... Is that Hundred Wolves-sama!?” (??)

“What a divine presence...” (??)

“To see the real thing is...” (??)

The residents were pressing their palms of both hands together like a light jab at Hokuto-kun.

Then, the [Wolf King] Manager, who understood Hokuto-kun’s words, divided the place, and he gave introduction of Hokuto-kun’s to the residents.

“Hundred Wolves-sama’s name is Hokuto-sama. He says that he wanted to be called by that starting from now.” (Manager)

“Oh, excuse me, Hokuto-sama. No, that’s a wonderful name.” (??)

“By the way... are you being together with the Elf and the human girl next to you? Aah, could they be Hokuto-sama’s attendant?” (??)

“No, they are not Hokuto-sama’s attendants. They are his companions. Everyone, I would like you to listen carefully, Hokuto-sama is a Beast Companion of a certain human.” (Manager)

“““What did you say!?””” (??)

Because of that harmonized mood of the residents, Reese-chan and Fia-san was wryly

smiling as if they wanted to say 'Again?'

"He is a Beast Companion of a human!?" (??)

"I'm going to punish for ordering the messenger of God!" (??)

"That person needs to come out! I don't know what kind of cowardly means used by-..." (??)

"Gurururu!" (Hokuto)

""""I sorry!?""" (??)

And this flow of event was also familiar.

Hokuto-kun hated if people talked bad about the Master.

Anyway, when it became quiet by the appeal (with bloodlust) of Hokuto-kun, the meeting which was the main event was finally started.

"Hmm... although it was unintentional just now, it is also true that there are many people scowling his human Master." (Manager)

"Well then, it can't be helped since the rumor spread that way, right? He is also being tolerant when he knows it." (??)

"However, Hokuto-sama wouldn't accept it that way? We have to compromise somehow." (Manager)

"Then, how about meeting several times with Hokuto-sama-..." (??)

"What a fool! Why are you trying to hold Hokuto-sama until that far!?" (Manager)

"But, without doing there, whether the people in the town would convinced or not..." (??)

"I would like to ask the Elf, does Hokuto-sama's hair loss ever happen? If you don't mind, I think by selling that..." (??)

"There is, but Sirius collected them all, but... can you really sell it?" (Fia)

“What did you say!? There are surely people who will try to buy it even with silver or gold!” (??)

“Aah... well since this is involved someone who is alive, I think it is better to stop that.” (Fia)

“What is Hokuto-sama’s favorite food? Let’s prepare it immediately.” (??)

“For your information... Hokuto doesn’t need to eat food, so he doesn’t have any favorite food. However, he would eat something if he has strong stimulus.” (Fia)

“Well, does he have any hobbies?” (??)

“He likes brushing and play with Frisbee.” (Fia)

“Hoo, I don’t understand that well, but leave it to me if it’s about brushing. Though I am looked like this, the famous brushing in town is... gahuuu!?” (??)

“But that is limited to Sirius-san, or you will be beaten if you carelessly get near him... aah, I was late.” (Reese)

“Hokuto-sama, please give me blessing... hebuuu!?” (??)

“That’s sneaky! I also would like to have Hokuto-sama’s blessing—... guhaa!?” (??)

“Please—... nuhaa!?” (??)

...There was a feeling that the story was starting to drift away.

Especially on the latter half... was it really necessary? Hokuto-kun unintentionally started asking that.

“Woof?” (Hokuto)

““““Yes, it is!”””” (??)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

✂ Hokuto-kun wanted to go home.

✂ Hokuto's blessing was... his Paw's Punch

Chapter 125

The Infiltrating Shadow

— Emilia —

Grethe-san and I were confronting with knives in an alley where it could reach the wall of the surrounding building in five steps.

I usually fought while swiftly moving around with the wind, but this place was a bit narrow, so it was hard to fight. If I used strong magic, it would damage the adjacent buildings. Therefore, I couldn't use it as well.

However, no matter where the location was, I wouldn't be able to survive unless I used my strength.

While remembering Sirius-sama's teaching, I activated [Boost] and I started running as I released [Air Shot] at the same time.

"Your magic is sharp, but it's obvious." (Grethe)

I shot four balls of wind so that I wouldn't damage the houses and the walls, but Grethe-san moved sideways and avoided it. She put her hand on the chest and took out something.

As I thought... I couldn't approach her from the opposite side. People, who fought like Grethe-san, didn't depend on strength. It was enough if they had techniques and ability to target the opening of the opponent. Hence, they had the tendency of avoiding from hitting directly.

I couldn't conclude if that applied to Grethe-san, but from the appearance of taking a distance and stepping back, it seemed that she didn't want to have a close fight.

And the things she took from the chest was a circular lump with the size of pebble...

"...Eh?" (Emilia)

It seemed to be easy to repel it. I accelerated while evading only by tilting my neck.

A small explosive sound was heard from the rear when I reached in front of Grethe-san and I saw white smoke flowing beside me.

As I expected, it seemed that it was a trap. If I knocked it down, it would explode in front of my eyes would have been disturbed for a while.

While speaking out with a loud voice, Grethe-san flipped the knife I swung with own knife and she was aiming for my arm with that momentum.

Since it was an attack caused by a brute force movement, it would cause minor injury if I got hit by it. It was good since it was also a fatal hit to the opponent if they received the blow. It was good, but...

“Fuh!” (Emilia)

“...Aah.” (Grethe)

I twisted my body and chose to evade it, and this time, I also aimed at the opponent’s arm with a knife that I switched to the opposite hand.

First off, I aimed at her arm in order to deprive the ability to attack, but a knife suddenly appeared from behind Grethe-san’s hand, and my knife was stopped.

“As expected, you were trained, isn’t it?” (Emilia)

“...You knew?” (Grethe)

“It was because I saw an unnatural bulging muscle on your arm, I was staring if anything would happen.” (Emilia)

The recent mock battles were not only to improve the techniques, but it was also to earn various battle experience. Since Sirius-sama’s constantly changed tactics, I could tolerate against irregular movements and unexpected attacks to a certain extent.

By the way, Sirius-sama called such weapons as hidden or unexpected weapons.

Grethe-san was a bit surprised and she took a distance from me again. At the same time, she threw several throwing knives she had on her waist.

The number was... four.

I repelled a knife and I threw a knife in return after evading the rest, but due to the distance, it could be avoided.

“You’re avoiding it in big way, huh? If it is you, you can avoid it without moving too much, isn’t it?” (Grethe)

“It’s pointless to provoke, you know? That knife... has something on it, right?” (Emilia)

One of his teachings was... never receive attacks from an assassin.

Since assassins merely needed to defeat the target, they used surprised attacks and attacks that sealed opponent movement.

Actually, I felt an unpleasant smell from Grethe-san’s knife and her throwing knives. Those knives were probably coated by poison or something.

“I don’t want to kill you, but... it’s impossible.” (Grethe)

“You display kindness to me, but why are you targeting Sirius-sama?” (Emilia)

“It’s just that I can’t helped with it. I can’t forgive anyone who will give an adverse effect to Mary-sama.” (Grethe)

“...I see, so you won’t change your mind?” (Emilia)

She was probably planning to flee until a while ago by disabling me, but since the air around Grethe-san had clearly changed, she seemed to be going all out this time.

When I held knives in both hands, Grethe-san, who was crawling on all fours, put up a smile.

“It’s fine... to hurt you right?” (Grethe)

At that moment, when I thought that Grethe-san’s figure had disappeared, I heard a noise of kicking from the right sight. When I swung the right hand knife right away, it collided against the knife of Grethe-san who was attacking.

And then, she moved away while giving a blow at the same time. This time, she kicked

a different wall and moved away. It seemed that she was used to battle in a narrow place.

She wasn't as fast as Sirius-sama or Isabella-sama, but she still quite fast. Even though the defense was in time, it seemed impossible to counterattack her.

"...This is troubling." (Emilia)

"It is strange for you to say that when you keep defending against my attacks. Well then... next is this." (Grethe)

Then, the circular tool that she threw ahead of time exploded at my feet, and my surroundings were covered with white smoke. However, since I was expecting that, I scattered the smoke by activating [Wind] from my feet.

Although I lost sight of Grethe-san on that momentary gap, I threw a knife on my left according to my intuition.

"...That's too bad." (Grethe)

It was a moment delayed, but the knife went past Grethe-san and deeply pierced into the wall.

Since Grethe-san was approaching without missing that opening, I widely swung my left hand while leaping aside trying to get away, but my feet had been stopped since she threw a knife in a direction where I was going to.

"You can't escape." (Grethe)

Grethe-san approached during the gap when my movement was stopped. I swung the knife on the right hand to repel the protruding hidden weapon, but Grethe-san's main choice was the knife held in her other hand.

My other hand was empty. It was difficult to avoid based on the ability difference. Grethe-san relaxed her mouth as if she was convinced, but...

"Eh!?" (Grethe)

Citing that surprised voice, it was the first time that she was shaken.

Anyhow, even though that it was clearly a space with nothing in it, since her movement was stopped as if her swinging arm was caught, it wasn't unreasonable for her to be surprised.

Perhaps, she might be able to see it if she was in a calm state. A fine thread was connected to the knife that was stuck on the wall and it was wrapped around Grethe-san's arm.

This was a technique of using threads learned from Sirius-sama. Incidentally, the thread was a spare bowstring given by Fia-san.

"Why-!?" (Grethe)

"It's already late... [Air Impact]." (Emilia)

I extended my left hand during that fatal opening, aimed it at Grethe-san's belly and unleashed the magic.

It was a ball of wind like before, but it was a magic that release a compressed wind to the surroundings, and now I was releasing it with the directivity like Sirius-sama's [Impact].

The violent wind impact from zero distance blew away Grethe-san to the wall behind her, and she crashed on her back.

However, she seemed to stay conscious. She stood with the wall behind her, trying to put her right hand on the chest.

"Like I'm going to let you do it." (Emilia)

I already start running and got in front of her. I swung the knife and severed Grethe-san right arm.

Although it was a moment, since I felt something wrong Grethe-san's right hand, I couldn't allow her to resist too much. If it came to this, it might be easy for Sirius-sama to connect it back.

"...Aah." (Grethe)

"I will ask for your treatment." (Emilia)

Then, I drove my palm below her chin and this time I reaped Grethe-san's consciousness.

Since a magic stone fell to her feet at the same time, it seemed to be right consideration to forcibly stopping her. Perhaps, this magic stone had been engraved with the explosion magic that I saw earlier.

"...Oops, that's not good. I'll think about it later." (Emilia)

I also didn't want to raise the attention, but it was necessary to immediately sealed the severed wrist.

When I looked for Grethe-san's right arm after quickly stopping the bleeding, Reese was standing without anyone noticed while floating the right arm covered in water in the arm. I also found that Hokuto-san and Fia-san were behind her. It seemed that they had been watching from the middle of the battle.

"Good job, Emilia. You can leave the conservation of the hand to me." (Reese)

"Your battle of using thread got better. By the way, I heard about the situation from Sirius, but it seems better to return soon now." (Fia)

"Yes. It may be fine for a while because of Reese, but this is a game against time after all." (Emilia)

"But... it is really Grethe-san, isn't it? I want to heal her quickly, but first is this, right?" (Reese)

"That's nice of you. But well, that's how you guys are." (Fia)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

Although she was someone who aimed for the life of the important Master, we were really kind for trying to cure the arm severed.

However, the condition of Grethe-san was strange, so whatever the outcome was, it would be better than losing an arm.

Like what Sirius-sama had said, it was better regret doing it than regret for not doing it...

After that, I put the unconscious Grethe-san on the back of Hokuto-san and hen, we returned to the [Wolf King] hall where Sirius-sama was waiting.



— Sirius —

We joined with Emilia and others who came back and we shared information. This was the second time we came to the Arbitray castle today.

I was worried whether we could get through since the night was already late, but we could get through the main with no problem.

“Not only Hundred Wolves-sama, you guys are deemed acceptable by Isabella-sama.”
(??)

They didn’t talk much, but it seemed that the influence was big when it came to people who have such a strength. Anyhow, we were allow to get through since we were well known.

We asked the guard in response to tell the Beast King that we came for an urgent business. We were led by the attendant of the castle and waited in a guest room.

From the large window of the guest room which was on the third floor of the castle, we saw a vast forest and mountains behind the battlefield where we fought earlier today. I couldn’t see it in detail since it was already dark outside, but the forest and mountain seemed to be quite large.

I was sitting and waiting on a chair in front of a table which was set up in the middle of the room and then the Beast King together with McDatt showed up.

I was going to ask for him if he didn’t come, but anyway, the actors were all here.

At first, they were surprised, but it seemed that they understood that this was an emergency from the atmosphere around us. The Beast King and McDatt sat in front of us with a serious look.

“This seems like a sudden visit, but... did something happened?” (Eisen)

“Yes. However, I would like people to leave before I explain. You should think it as a

confidential.” (Sirius)

“...Alright.” (Eisen)

He looked like having a doubt due to my request, but whether he couldn't simply decline due to the indebtedness to us, he instructed the attendants who were in the room to leave.

I finally got into the main subject when there were only us, the Beast King and McDatt in the guest room.

“This would be fine. Let me ask this again. Why on earth are you coming at this kind of time?” (Eisen)

“It happened a while ago, but it was a problem occurred that couldn't be ignored. To put it simply... my life was targeted.” (Sirius)

“What!?” (Eisen)

“I already secure the criminal. Reus.” (Sirius)

“Ouu!” (Reus)

As Reus dropped the big bag he held from the inn on the floor and let out the content, the Beast King and McDatt opened their eyes wide.

“Gre-Grethe!?” (Eisen)

“This is...? Why my subordinate—... could it be!?” (McDatt)

“Just as you imagined. She aimed at my life, so we had no choice but to fight back and captured her.” (Sirius)

Grethe-san, whose both hands put down and tied up, was awake, but she couldn't speak since there was a gag in her mouth.

She was watched over by Hokuto and Reus and had no chance to run away. Moreover, she was diverting her eyes to escape from the sharp look of the Beast King.

“Is that true?” (Eisen)

“I have no need to lie. Besides, if I want to do it, I will take more reliable measures.”
(Sirius)

Since I would educate Mea from tomorrow, if I wanted to do something like that, I could just make Mea as a hostage.

The argument would be a bit weak to deceive an escort on the brunt, but if he was a king, he should have noticed it.

The Beast King was relieved once he confirmed that there was no noticeable wound on us, but the woman’s employer, McDatt, was flustered and came closer to the Beast King.

“Please hold it, Beast King-sama! My subordinate will not do such a foolish behavior!”
(McDatt)

“She repeatedly said that this was for Mea-sama’s sake. I don’t understand the reason, but is there any dissatisfaction just because I become Mea-sama’s educator?” (Sirius)

“Did you force Grethe just because of that? She has a body that attract man, so it is not weird to be allured by such-...” (McDatt)

“Stop it already, McDatt. I want to believe you and Grethe, but I also can understand that these people don’t need to take such measures. Anyway, you should ask the circumstances from Grethe.” (Eisen)

However, Grethe looked downward as if she had given up everything.

The Beast King approached after listening her excuse but McDatt interrupted while keeping his head down.

“Please forgive me, Beast King-sama. First of all... May I speak with Grethe?” (McDatt)

“...Alright.” (Eisen)

Then, McDatt bent in front of Grethe and gently spoke after removing the gag.

“Grethe Ricole... Answer my question.” (McDatt)

“...Yes.” (Grethe)

“Did you really... aim for Sirius-kun’s life?” (McDatt)

Grethe raised up her face in response to McDatt question. She quietly nodded with empty eyes.

“...Yes. I was aiming for... Sirius-kun’s life.” (Grethe)

“You did that for Mary-sama’s sake? Did you accept that dogmatic behavior” (McDatt)

“Yes... for Mary-sama’s sake, I did it on my own.” (Grethe)

McDatt shook while holding his head since Grethe easily admit it.

“As I hear, there is no mistake that you’re doing on your own. Why would you do such a foolish thing...” (McDatt)

“I will punish you later for not able to prevent your subordinate from acting recklessly. But, Grethe... you have done such a thing to them whom you troubled with a false accusation. How on earth are you going to apologize?” (Eisen)

“Beast King-sama... there is no way to apologize other than dying. Grethe Ricole. If your sins are unforgivable, chew your tongue and end it now!” (McDatt)

“Wait! There is no need to do-...” (Eisen)

Faster than the Beast King trying to stop her, Grethe showed a movement like opening mouth a bit and bit his tongue.

Even now, there was nothing we could do other than looking at Grethe who was killing herself...

“...That can’t do.” (Grethe)

No... it should be said that we didn’t have to move.

The words were shot, but Grethe showed a clear rejection.

No matter how sinful people were, I thought that it was normal to dislike death but the one who give the most respond to Grethe’s rejection was McDatt.

“Do you think such childish excuse will be accepted? Grethe Ricole,... you have sinned! It will be natural to compensate by death!” (McDatt)

“I don’t want it. If I die, I would like to die for Mary-sama, so I will live and atone this sin.” (Grethe)

“Grethe Ricole! You...” (McDatt)

“...It’s pointless, McDatt-san.” (Sirius)

McDatt called her name many times, but I untied the restraint of Grethe-san as to interrupt him in middle.

The Beast King was also surprised with that action, but instead of running away, Grethe submissively knelt.

“She will not obey your order any longer. If you push all the crimes against Grethe and make her suicide... it seemed like you tried to destroy the evidence.” (Sirius)

“Destroying the evidence? What are you saying? Didn’t Grethe admit guilty?” (McDatt)

“She was just repeating your words. I instructed her to do so, but...” (Sirius)

In order to see the movement of McDatt, I gave order to Grethe to do that.

Although I was able to figure out his true nature, we could know it because of that action.

Ignoring McDatt who was trying to say something, I tapped Grethe’s shoulder and turned my eyes toward the Beast King.

“Beast King-sama. What Grethe will talk from now is her true intention. Could you judge after listening to it?” (Sirius)

“Hmm... there are many things I don’t understand, but I will still listen to everyone’s opinion. It’s fine to speak, Grethe.” (Eisen)

“Thank you very much. I... certainly aimed for Sirius-kun’s life. Since it is a truth, I will properly make up for it. But... I didn’t want to kill him. However, I was forced by McDatt to think of him as an enemy, and I was induced to kill.” (Grethe)

“Ricole! Shut your mouth!” (McDatt)

“Although I didn’t want to kill, I tried to kill because I was put under impression... Do you understand that?” (Grethe)

“It wasn’t a normal persuasion. If I have to be detail... although this was obviously weird, there are techniques that make you think that as something natural things to do.” (Sirius)

Since the Beast King was confused because of the complicated situation, I explained the situation when I was about to be killed and what happened to Grethe.



The story went back to a few hours ago...

...when Grethe failed to assassinate me and ran away.

I managed to convince the employee of the [Wolf King] who came because of the explosion in the air and make them returned. After finished cleaning the broken windows... Emilia came home and she brought the captured Grethe.

While I was being watched Emilia and others who took care of their bodies, I joined the blood vessels one by one with [String] in order to attach Grethe’s arm. She was lying on the bed at that time.

I asked the ladies to check her belongings and restrained her so that she wouldn’t struggle. I didn’t have to worry if I got attacked when she suddenly woke up. Since I kept Hokuto at the bedside, even if she tried to do something, she would be instantly caught.

“Please forgive me. Because of me, you have to put extra effort...” (Emilia)

“Don’t worry about it. Your judgment wasn’t wrong.” (Sirius)

To be honest, it was quite hard since I was tired physically and mentally.

Even so, since what I was currently doing was a surgery, I focused my mind while ignoring the fatigue and continued working.

Did that take about an hour? Incidentally, I had Reese took over where all important vascular bones and vessels were severe.

“Thanks for the hard work. I only need to heal it afterwards, right?” (Reese)

“Yes, Reese can concentrate on treatment and I will match with you by removing the threads.” (Sirius)

Finally, I erased the [String]s connecting the blood vessels and bones at the same time with Reese treatment.

During the time when Reese’ treatment magic permeating, I drank tea brewed by Emilia while taking a breath out. At that time, Reus muttered while looking at the sleeping Grethe.

“...I definitely can’t forgive Grethe-san for what she did, but why she aim for Aniki’s life?” (Reus)

“Even if you ask that question, she would say that it was for Mea-chan, you know? From the reaction of the people in that castle and the Beast King families, I wonder if they recklessly act because of Mea-chan?” (Fia)

“Mea-chan is adversely affecting them, but... I think it is a bit too much to accuse that. That also can’t be forgiven, right?” (Emilia)

“I have decided to push this matter to the castle, and I will also ask for reparation. But before going there, I have something that I want to investigate.” (Sirius)

After the treatment was over and the [String]s had disappeared, we just needed to wait until Grethe-san woke up later. Incidentally, I picked up the bracelet she had on the table nearby.

“Is that... the bracelet worn by Grethe-san?” (Emilia)

“Yes, it was put on the severed arm. I am very concern about it since a while ago.” (Sirius)

“So, did Grethe-san took such action because of that?” (Emilia)

“The possibility is high but I can’t say it for certain. But... I notice something. At least,

mana isn't released from that, so it seems that it receives mana from the outside, but..." (Sirius)

When I examined the bracelet, there was a complicated and fine magic formation engraved on the reverse side.

It was a magic formation that I saw for the first time, but the most interesting part about this bracelet was an existence of other things than the magic formation.

"Oh my. From one thing to another... I will never get bored of this." (Sirius)

Today... it would be a long night.

When this incident ended, I thought of sleeping together with Hokuto who had sharp intuition and slept soundly until the morning.

"Aniki, the bracelet is bad, is it?" (Reus)

"I'm not sure, but it turns out that this magic tool was made by Shishou." (Sirius)

On Grethe's bracelet, there were a magic formation of Shishou's mark.

When Shishou was still traveling around the world as an Elf, she said that she halfheartedly made various magic tools and this was one of them.

However, since Shishou's magic formation was too complicated to know the effect, I couldn't confirmed that she was manipulated by this thing. I had found various magic tools made by Shishou until now, but many of them didn't really matter.

Anyhow...



{Yes... this is certainly the one I made.} (Shisho)

We went outside the mansion and I decided to ask Shishou directly. By the way, Hokuto was inside the mansion to watch over Grethe.

{But I can't remember its effect. It's because I've made countless bracelet... } (Shishou)

“I think about it every time, but don’t forget what you have made, you know. At least, leave a document, or even a memo.” (Sirius)

Looking from the side, people would only see us as a strange bunch of people who were talking to a wooden knife stabbed on the ground.

Other people might not hear Shishou, but we surely heard her voice and were talking to her.

{Yeah... I can’t remember. Aah, I’m thirsty... } (Shishou)

“...Emilia.” (Sirius)

“Yes, please be careful. It’s hot.” (Emilia)

{No, no... it’s good when it’s hot. Yeah... I can see a bit disorder in the tea, but as expected, it is tasty... } (Shishou)

When Emilia poured the tea brewed onto the knife, the delighted voices of Shishou echoed in our brain.

Now... to explain this situation in detail, should I say that the wooden knife I got from Shishou had her will...?

To be exact, it could be said as a fission of Shishou, but anyhow, this knife contains her will and the knowledge, and if I prepared the requirement, a conversation was possible just like my [Call].

I confirmed the function several months after I got this knife, but of course, the conversation wasn’t easy.

For some reason, it was useless unless the knife was stabbed in the ground, maybe because the material was made of wood. Furthermore, it requires enormous amount of mana, so I couldn’t do it unless I filled it up with a manastone.

A conversation took about ten minutes by using one stone and it nearly cost ten god coins... no matter how much money I had, it wouldn’t be enough. A manastone crumbled every time I used it, and this was one of the reasons why we were short of money.

For that reason, I didn't want to rely on this method too much, but I decided to consult her because I was in hurry this time.

{More tea!} (Shishou)

"If you want it, please remember it quickly." (Sirius)

{It can't be helped then... place the bracelet here.} (Shishou)

I was... repeatedly driven with an urge to smash this knife, but far from breaking up, it wasn't damaged at all.

Although it didn't burn, I endured myself from putting a fire on it. Instead, I placed the bracelet on the knife.

{Hmmm... this magic tool, if it is activated, the wearer would be in a hypnotic state. It seems to a magic tool that makes the wearer to easily follow an implication.} (Shishou)

"Is it similar to how Aniki was trying to make me sleep when I was a child?" (Reus)

"It is something similar. I see. Then, it seemed that Grethe was being implicated." (Sirius)

"So the content of the suggestion is... to kill Sirius for Mea-chan's sake?" (Fia)

{Ooh, I remember now. The reason for making this was certainly because there was a fool saying that tea couldn't be drunk during a trip, so I made it to force that person to drink it. Well, I made it for that... hahaha!} (Shishou)

No, it wasn't something to be laugh at when she included the reason.

However, Shishou didn't make such a tool for this kind of excessive behavior. Be a magic tool or a weapon, it all depended on the person who used it.

"Grethe-san did something unforgivable, but the one that I can't forgive more is that culprit!" (Emilia)

"Me too! Giving a suggestion to conduct murder... I will not forgive such a person!" (Reese)

“I don’t know who is that, but I will slice if I find that guy!” (Reus)

“Hey, I know that you are angry, but calm down. Especially you, Rues. If you calmly think about the culprit, you have rough prediction, right?” (Sirius)

There was only one person who wasn’t interested when I became Mea’s educator.

More importantly... No, it was too early to confirm since I hadn’t had much conversation with that person yet.

Anyway, I needed to see that guy directly.

After finishing the conversation with Shishou, we returned to the mansion and put the bracelet on Grethe. I used the activation key I heard from Shishou to activate the magic tool at the same time when she woke up. In addition, I cancelled the implication given to Grethe.

Grethe noticed the significant of the mess she had done due the implication. She didn’t only knelt down while hitting her head with a momentum on the floor, she took off her clothes trying to compensate with her body.

That situation was somehow concluded with the ability of the ladies. Incidentally, when it became calm, I looked at Grethe again.

“I have decided to take you to the castle and I will decide the punishment later. But, if you want to compensate for your sins even a little, we want you to cooperate.” (Sirius)

“...I will do anything if I can. I definitely think of this for the sake of Mary-sama, so even if I am sentenced to death, I want to die for her sake...” (Grethe)

From here on, in order to successfully draw out the nature of the culprit, we came to the castle after discussing and preparing some tricks.



“...Hence, Grethe had a cloudy judgment due to the magic tool, and that’s why she was imprinted with lies by McDatt. That is one of the methods called implication.” (Sirius)

In short, Grethe was used as to cut off the tail.

If Grethe succeeded in the assassination, an eyesore like me would disappear or even if she failed and to be like this in the present situation, he could try to destroy the evidence by ordering her to suicide.

I didn't tell that it came from Shishou, but as I summarized the information, the Beast King nodded as if he was convinced.

"Aah... I see. The reason why that guy insisted on using Grethe's family name was because..." (Eisen)

"Yes, that was the activation key." (Sirius)

The culprit was using Grethe's full name because her family name 'Ricole' was the bracelet's activation key.

By the way, the magic formation of the bracelet had been modified before coming to the castle so that it wouldn't activated.

The culprit who was silenced by such explanation from me... McDatt, gathered the attention of everyone, but he just stood without expression.

"McDatt, their explanation is convincing, but do you have anything to say?" (Eisen)

"...No, I have nothing. I never thought that somebody could figure out my plan this far, so I'd rather praise them. Actually, this is interesting..." (McDatt)

When I thought whether he would resign himself after being questioned by the Beast King, McDatt was smiling happily.

Hmm... he was somehow expecting this.

"Please forgive me, Beast King-sama. Everything is true. I was deprived from the job of educator of Mary-sama, so..." (McDatt)

"Quit the farce." (Sirius)

McDatt admitted his fault, but I interjected to stop him.

My companions and the Beast King were tilting their head to me because I suddenly said such a thing, but I kept talking while staring at McDatt.

“...Sirius-sama?” (Emilia)

“What’s wrong Aniki?” (Sirius)

“Not just the body, I’m not sure how you change your mana, but it seems that it is impossible to change the unique presence when looking at that prey.” (Sirius)

“...What are you talking about?” (Eisen)

“McDatt is also a fake name, right? When I saw you one year ago... you were a woman.” (Sirius)

He seemed to be nothing but a male human, but I was convinced with that smile.

I would not forget that... a year ago, that person was the only prey that escaped during the fight in Parade.

“I wonder if the wound shot by me already completely cured?” (Sirius)

With that words, McDatt... No, the mysterious existence put up an hideous smile.



✂Supplementary explanation

The person Sirius mentioned appeared in Chapter 107.



Extra

Excerpts from a certain scene.

Grethe noticed the significant of the mess she had done due the suggestion. She didn’t only knelt down while hitting her head with a momentum on the floor, she took out her clothes trying to compensate with her body.

“Even if you guys feel unease, you can do anything you want to me. My appearance is

inferior than those girls, but I have confidence in my body, so..." (Grethe)

"Haa!" (Emilia)

"Take it easy, Nee-chan!" (Reus)

The moment Grethe only left with underwear, Emilia tried to poke Reus' eyes, but... Reus was defending well.

Since he was done before, Reus' crisis avoidance ability was quite high.

That failed to close Reus' eyes, but since Reus kept hitting and defending against his sister, there was no room to look at Grethe at all. Whatever the circumstances was, as long as she made him unable to see, it meant she had succeeded in her cause.

In the meantime, my vision was gently blocked by the palm of Reese who stood behind me.

"Who-who am I?" (Reese)

"You don't have to overdoing it since you can just block normally. But well, your innocence is cute." (Sirius)

"Yes, yes, we can't talk if you take it off. So, let's put on the clothes." (Fia)

"...I've lost all confidence." (Grethe)

The ladies in the house were competent in many ways.



Hokuto and Shishou

✂It feels that this part is slightly neglected, so please read it with an open heart.
(Author)

It turned out that the knife received from Shishou was a fission of her, and this was the conversation for the second time.

Although they were got used to each other to a certain extent, Hokuto didn't approached the knife maybe because he had difficulties to deal with her, but he was coming closer during the second conversation.

{Oh, aren't you Dog-chan? You look good.} (Shishou)

"...Woof." (Hokuto)

A sight where a knife stuck on the ground and a large wolf gazed at it... it looked surreal.

{By the way, although it is a bit late to say this, your Master is good at handling woman, isn't it?} (Shishou)

"Woof?" (Hokuto)

{I was worried since he lived his life only with you and me deep in the mountains.} (Shishou)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

{More importantly, it seems satisfying even in the night. However, well, sometimes woman wants to be overwhelmed. Especially, doing bondage on Emilia or... } (Shishou)

"Alright, Hokuto, take it! You can mark it all you want!" (Sirius)

{Wait, what are going to do!?!} (Shishou)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

{Hey! It's fine to bite, but the claw is- aahh!?!} (Shishou)

The result was... the knife didn't have even one scratch mark.

It seemed that Hokuto tried to mark it with claws, but since both claws and the knife were in perfect condition, Hokuto was slightly overwhelmed

“...Why did you shout when you weren’t even scratched?” (Sirius)

{It’s a tree, you know... and that’s it. You will understand when you become a tree!}
(Shishou)

“How am I supposed to understand that!?” (Sirius)

In other words, he had to stop being a human, wasn’t it?

It seemed impossible to understand it even if he lived the whole life.

Chapter 126

Threat Again

A year ago... there was a massive monster invasion in the town of Parade where Reus' lover lived.

We were also there. The monsters were driven away with the great effort of Reus and the townspeople, but obviously, the monster invasion was strange.

In that situation, there was Chimera which was a monster that an unlikely wide variety of monster mixed together that would never born naturally. It was as if it was attached with other monsters by force.

As a result of an investigation, it gathered monsters, and it turned out that this monster invasion was caused by someone's hand.

The deciding factor of that thought was... a mysterious woman who I found in the middle of the situation.

I sensed danger because she was as if observing the outcome of Chimera, so I aimed with [Magnum], but I missed inflicting a fatal wound.

I was convinced that the prey that slipped away was a man before me whose named McDatt.

It was a story of a year ago, but the prey wasn't only having a different mana response, the gender was completely different. However, there was no mistake about that expression as if watching a laboratory animal with great delight.

"I wonder if the wound shot by me already completely cured?" (Sirius)

McDatt put up a hideous smile at the words I uttered with certainty.

My confused companion also probably sensed that he was an enemy. They started to feel wary of the existence of McDatt or something while preparing for battle.

Then, the Beast King and Grethe, who were deeply related to McDatt, asked questions while puzzled by the situation.

“Who are you? Aren’t you... McDatt-sama?” (Grethe)

“What are you saying, Grethe? I am definitely McDatt.” (McDatt)

“Don’t lie. McDatt is not a person who has that kind of presence and laugh! Where is the real person!?” (Eisen)

“So persistent, isn’t it? Well, it may be true though. The real McDatt is asleep.” (McDatt)

Although the intimidation unleashed by those two was considerable, the hideous smile of McDatt didn’t crumble, and it seemed that he didn’t intend to hide the tone or expression already.

As for escaping, the only door in the room was in the way of the Beast King. It wouldn’t be easy then. If he broke the window and escape, I would definitely shot him with [Magnum] this time.

However, since I didn’t know the true nature of his existence, it would be dangerous to attack blindly. I was looking at the situation to collect information even a little, but when he slowly started walking, he brought a chair in front of a window and just sat down.

“Sleeping? If it’s like this, shall I force you to speak up?” (Eisen)

“Please wait, Beast King-sama. There is probably no mistake that he is the real McDatt.” (Sirius)

“...What do you mean?” (Eisen)

“The body is certainly McDatt, but there is a possibility that some other existence possesses him.” (Sirius)

He looked like an ordinary man and the mana response that I felt through [Search] was completely different from that woman a year ago.

However, those were the information felt from outside, and the slight inconsistency of mana response felt since I met this guy was... now several times more disordered

compared to what could occur naturally.

However, by directly meeting him, I was able to confirm the true nature by looking at that smile and air around him. I could probably find out more by touching him, but there was almost no mistake.

It was sure enough. When McDatt heard my words, let alone of that hideous smile, he was laughing out loud.

“Hehehe, I can’t say nothing but splendid. Like you have said, I am existence that possess McDatt who Beast King-sama knows.” (McDatt)

“...You awfully make light of that, huh?” (Sirius)

“I told you because it won’t be a problem to me. Even so, you really amaze me. You arrived at this answer without even doing enough investigation, isn’t it?” (McDatt)

He looked at me with an impressed expression, but I wasn’t very happy about it.

Anyhow, I had plenty of irrational experience... well starting with previous life experience with Shishou, a sacred tree that talked about incarnation, and a talking knife even though it felt awfully unbalanced. It was too late to feel strange if there was an existence that possessed like a ghost.

“Well, you don’t have to care about me. When you are on the surface, where is the original owner of the body?” (Sirius)

“He is completely asleep when I take over the consciousness. In fact, the owner’s consciousness is a hindrance, but it is necessary for to break the surroundings...” (McDatt)

The Beast King was starting to unleash bloodlust at the enemy who completely treated people like a tool.

After listening to that, McDatt seemed to be an old timer who had served this castle for long time. I guessed that it was natural that the Beast King because McDatt was his close friend and advisor.

However, when he received such a bloodlust, the existence that stood before us was sitting on a chair while remained aloof.

“There is no mistake that you are that woman who ran away at that time.” (Sirius)

“Ooh, the wound you inflicted was severe. In addition, the body movement also became bad, and I was in trouble because of it, but should I be thankful because I was approached by this man?” (McDatt)

“If you were the one that attacked Parade, you were also the one who created that good-for-nothing monster that gather various monsters, right?” (Sirius)

“Stop there! I would say that it is true, but shall I correct one of your assumption? That wasn’t a good-for-nothing monster. It was one of my greatest works!” (McDatt)

He was probably fixated, but he showed an excessive reaction to my statement.

Although he made something that could destroy a town if it wasn’t properly managed, I couldn’t see any reflection from the behavior when he rebutted.

It was common to mad scientist, and they were existences who thought nothing but their own work.

“Subsequently, let me tell you my name as a reward for noticing my identity. My name is Belford. I am a great magical researcher who transcends death.” (McDatt/Belford)

When I thought of why he stood on a chair, Belford spread his hands as if giving speech.

Not only true identity, he also taught the name easily, but I didn’t recognize that name.

I was concern about many things, but what did he mean by transcending death?

“...What are you talking about? It will be over when you die, isn’t it?” (Reus)

“Well. That’s why we’re going to live our live to the fullest.” (Emilia)

Yes... the siblings were right, death would surely come.

Besides, I firmly thought them about it. Whether there was magic or other world, there was no such thing as running away from death.

I was curious about what he said, but let’s put the matter of death aside.

First of all, why was such a person here...?

“So, you who transcended death, why would you possess a human body and what are you trying to do?” (Sirius)

“Oh my, your reaction is weak. I don’t die you know? Aren’t you interested about that?” (Belford)

“I have no interest in immortality. It’s because that kind of idea is coming for a weak person.” (Sirius)

“I am also not interested. Never mind. Answer my question quickly! What were you planning to do in our country!?” (Eisen)

“Ooh, that’s scary. It can’t be helped then. Let me tell you.” (Belford)

There was no change in the attitude of Belford even though we had the Beast King, Grethe, and Hokuto in this place.

Instead, while displaying pleasure, he started to talk as if giving a presentation.

“The reason why I am here is to experiment... nothing else. I was looking for a new experiment since I couldn’t do it in the place before, and I accidentally came across an interesting experiment...” (Belford)

“Experiment... are you kidding me, you bastard!?” (Eisen)

“Yeah. It’s about your cute Mary-chan.” (Belford)

“-!? What did you do to Mary-sama!?” (Grethe)

“Even though the effect has remarkably appeared, you probably don’t know. But, as for you, adventurers, you already know, right?” (Belford)

“...Aah.” (Sirius)

Although Mea was poisoned in the past, she was popular enough to make beastkin to create a fuss just because of mana exhaustion.

What did this guy do in Parade was creating a monster that gathered surrounding

monsters.

The similarity about those two matters was...

“Did you sow a method of fascinating beastkin in that child?” (Sirius)

“You’re sharp, but it is a bit different. What attract the beastkin is the ability held in that experimental body since the beginning. I pulled it out a little bit and made it easier to influence the surroundings.” (Belford)

I had expected that for a bit, but was that the ability of Mea since the beginning?

But, I got to understand a lot of things.

She was also a child, but even though the siblings were angry because I was put in jail, they were having an unusual favorable feeling about Mea.

The Beast King and Grethe, who heard the reply, opened their eyes as though they were shocked, but Belford spoke while still smiling.

“Oh my, are you shocked? But, don’t worry. Your affection is a real affection.” (Belford)

“You...” (Eisen)

“My former body had reached the limit and when I tried to enter the body of the man who helped me... I surely didn’t think that I could find such an interesting experimental body.” (Belford)

“You said that you were rescued? Could it be that... you were that woman who attacked McDatt-sama?” (Grethe)

“That is correct. Plus, I was glad that this man was the educator for that experimental body. It was all coincidental, but I was trembled with joy at that time! Ahahaha!” (Belford)

A year ago... after Belford was inflicted with a fatal injury by [Magnum]... s/he went beyond the previous continent and arrived at Arbitray.

However, the body that was shot by [Magnum] reached the limit and it seemed that McDatt helped her when s/he collapsed in this town.

Then, McDatt was attacked due to carelessness, s/he abandoned the former body and possessed McDatt. Incidentally, the former body died after biting McDatt's chest.

Moreover, in order to praise his brilliant achievement, Belford's mad presentation continued.

"Although it is not as much as me, that experimental body's curiosity is strong. Since this man was in trouble since he moved here and there, I helped a bit, and he merely accepted." (Belford)

"No way... did you poisoned Mary-sama!?" (Grethe)

"Oi oi, that is a misunderstanding. I only gave the ingredients to the cook, and that guy arbitrarily used it. So, it's not because of me. That guy forgot to ask about the ingredients, but yeah..." (Belford)

Perhaps, the cook was made to forget about the ingredients that contained poison by implication.

Although there was no magic tool used like in Grethe case, if the cook knew how to use it, McDatt could do it when that cook was put to sleep by using drugs.

"My plan was to make the eyes was completely unusable. However, it was unexpected that the experimental body could go out even though she couldn't see well and because of the early treatment by the beastkin." (Belford)

I had predicted that, but... there were still a lot of missing pieces.

There was no need to ask questions since he would continue talking, and we had to listen to his sickening story and things that we didn't need to hear.

The Beast king and Grethe were enduring well-... No, when I looked at them, they were thinking hard about it.

Perhaps, they were thinking that their affection were due to Mea's ability?

It surely looked abnormal, but from the reaction of the siblings, I thought that it was favorable due to fostering of relationship bit by bit. Rather, even though the blood wasn't connected, I knew an old man who thought of Emilia as a cute granddaughter.

It might be a pity, but even when I looked at it, it felt something wrong whether it could be said as a true affection.

Why was this guy... keep talking without hiding anything?

Was it because he was telling lies?

Or was it because he wanted to brag about his research?

Or was he giving up because he couldn't escape?

It could be any one of them, but as we became concerned about what he was saying, it was certain that he was sealing off our approach.

Or maybe... he was trying to earn time?

"Reus, Hokuto... secure him." (Sirius)

"Understood!" (Reus)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"Oh my, this chit chat has to end here. It can't be helped... Come on in." (Belford)

I didn't know his aim, but I had a bad feeling. Therefore, we were trying to catch him while he was still talking.

It seemed that the Beast King also came to the same idea when looking at us. At that time, when the Beast King moved in to fill the gap... the door of the room was suddenly opened.

"Hmm? Ooh, you came just right. Catch that guy... what are you guys doing?" (Eisen)

The ones that entered the room was the Beast King's family members, Isabella and

Keith, but... the situation was obviously strange.

Isabella held the sleeping Mea on her chest while Keith was carrying a halberd which wasn't drawn.

Instead of looking at the surprised Beast King, they walked toward Belford with no hesitation, and handed Mea over.

"Wha!? Isabella, what are you doing!?" (Eisen)

"It's just... for Mary's sake." (Isabella)

"Your brother will do everything for the sister." (Keith)

Then, they came in front of us in order to protect Belford.

I didn't sense any bloodlust, but I had a feeling of urgency that this would surely become a battle if things handled poorly.

"You came on time. Actually, it's not only these people, I am also in trouble because Beast King-sama tries to harm Mary." (Belford)

"Yeah... that's too bad." (Isabella)

"Even if it's the old man, I will not allow him to touch my sister!" (Keith)

"Why would I do such a thing!? And what on earth are you trying to do?" (Eisen)

"Beast King-sama. Apparently, these two seem to be in the same situation as Grethe." (Sirius)

Looking at the state of those two and the appearance of Belford, it seemed that they were implicated.

However, that didn't deter us even a bit.

They were strong, but I didn't think that they had an opening to be implicated. Especially Isabella, I had a feeling that she would avoid such things like drugs and suspicious movements by intuition, but...

“Discernment. Like what I said earlier, these two were under impression that what they were doing were correct. Today, there were various things happened and they were tired. So, it was easy to be deceived.” (Sirius)

...Apparently, they didn't put up vigilance because they were tired due to the battles with us.

Furthermore, since this guy was also Mary's educator, their vigilance would be more relaxed if he brought her before them.

“Not only my daughter, he also got my wife and son on his side. But, don't think you can return home!” (Eisen)

“You know, no matter how you look at it, they are happy, right? They would wage their life for loved one... isn't this something beautiful for existence like you guys?” (Belford)

“Are you kidding me!? Are you saying that it is a useless thing to do!?” (Eisen)

“This is for Mary's sake!” (Keith)

“You need to wake up! Don't lose to the implication!” (Reus)

Despite of the implication, I guessed that he couldn't forgive Keith's behavior just because he fought him once.

While Reus shouted, I whispered to the Beast King and told the information.

“Beast King-sama. About those two...” (Sirius)

Apparently, this was the first time that those two were implicated.

This was my expectation, but since this was their first time, the implication effect might be light. So, in case of the perseverance, if they were given a strong blow, they might return to sanity.

Other than that, I asked the Beast King to stop their movement so that he could resolve the implication. He, then, quietly nodded.

“If that's the case, I will hold down my wife. Grethe, you look for that guy's opening and regain Mary.” (Eisen)

“...By all mean!” (Grethe)

“I’m sorry, but I need your help. I leave Keith and McDatt to you guys, alright?” (Eisen)

“You don’t have to apologize. I also have a reason to bring him down.” (Sirius)

“Thanks. I don’t mind if you hit my son, but please don’t kill him. And that McDatt, he is a suspicious existence beyond reason... so I will let you decide. No matter the result is, I promise that I won’t treat it as a crime.” (Eisen)

“I will do my best. Then, as I expected...” (Sirius)

“Leave Keith to me, Aniki! I am going to beat him and wake him up!” (Reus)

Like this, the remaining of us would be Belford’s opponents.

I didn’t know the requirement of taking possession by the enemy, but since there was an information that he bit the chest, I should avoid contact as much as possible.

Although the fatigue of the day still remained, I had a persistent ladies team and also Hokuto. Therefore, there was no need to be impatient. Anyhow, I just need to be careful if I was going to do this.

However, there were things that were still worrisome.

I was surprised with his reinforcement, but was that all in his hand?

He was a person who almost didn’t leave traces when experimenting in Romanio, so would he try to fight with such a difference in fighting power?

When I thought about it, Belford true nature wasn’t an implication but a monster.

Then, he casually walked toward... the window by his side.

I instinctively activated a wide range [Search], and...

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“...Something is coming! Get away from the window!” (Sirius)

Hokuto barked as he noticed the presence and at the same time, I also caught a reaction approaching from the sky above the castle at great speed with [Search]

With a considerable size of reaction, it completely fell down and stopped in front of the window behind Belford. That caused severe impact and wind pressure to the surrounding. The impact caused the windows and walls crumbled and wind blew into the room.

The flying fragments of walls and windows were attacking us, but all of it were knocked down by Reus' and my weapons and Hokuto's claws and tail while he stood in front of the ladies.

It seemed that the Beast King survived without problems, but his eyes and Grethe's were directed outside the broken window behind Belford.

"Kuhh... what is that!?" (Eisen)

"Huge..." (Grethe)

A huge dragon was there.

Its size was five times bigger than Hokuto, but... I wasn't sure whether I should call it a dragon.

The scale and color of dragons were different depending on species, but most of the time, it had a beautiful brilliant one color on the whole body.

However, the existence in front of me looked dirty on the whole, and I didn't feel like calling it beautiful at all. If it was a human, the skin was peeling off and it was severely rough.

The body illuminated by the moonlight was black overall, but it came with several red and yellow arms, blue scales feet, and green wings... It was probably the same as the Chimera we saw before.

The Chimera seen in Parade were made with various local monsters, and since this monster was made by dragons alone, should I called it a synthetic dragon?

With the synthetic dragon behind, Belford held Mary while putting up an ominous smile.

“...Is that also your work?” (Sirius)

“Yeah, call it Dragloss.” (Belford)

When Belford raised his hand, the synthetic dragon called Dragloss gave a loud roar. This was exactly the same behavior as Chimera we had seen before.

I immediately activated [Search], and as I expected, I noticed several reactions approaching our direction. At the same time, Hokuto loudly howled and raised vigilance.

During that gap, Belford jumped out of the window and he was looking down at us from the back of Dragloss.

“Wait! What are you going to do with my daughter!?” (Eisen)

“What else other than doing experiments? I had to do it secretly until now, but it seems like I can do flashier than before.” (Belford)

“I’m not going to let you do that! I will get my daughter back!” (Eisen)

“...That’s not good.” (Isabella)

“Don’t get in the way, old man! This is for Mary’s sake!” (Keith)

The Beast King tried to jump out to the front, but he was blocked by Isabella and Keith.

It seemed that he still fixated in treating Mea as an experimental body. Therefore, I didn’t think he would do anything on this occasion, but I wasn’t sure what kind of mess he would do later.

I also thought about shooting him, but it was difficult to do it since he looked to be wary about me. It might be because he received [Magnum] in the past,

In the meantime, the pterosaurs that twice size of my body started to gather around Dragloss. The number was... twenty or so.

“Are those Lindworms!? That number is...” (Eisen)

“The amount seems troublesome, isn’t it? Where are these dragons coming from?”

(Fia)

“It was a species of dragon inhabiting the mountain that a bit far from here. However, they rarely come to where people live... what does this mean?” (Eisen)

“Of course, this Dragloss called them. By the way, this has improved better than before. It doesn’t only gather, but it can give order. Don’t you think that this is amazing?” (Belford)

I wondered if he was proud of his word because he was strangely descriptive.

In other words, Belford was talking nonstop in order to earn time, and that was he called these dragons nearby.

The Lindworms didn’t attack us. I guessed that they were flying around Dragloss due to its new feature, but when dragons appeared in this number, it really stood out.

When I carefully listened, the voices of the beastkin who worked in the castle reverberated from the window of a colonnade. Then, the door of the guest room was opened again and several armed men came in.

“Are you safe, Beat King-sama?” (??)

“Beast King, this way, please! The Bow Squad and Magic Squad are ready!” (??)

“At the moment, there is no damage other than a part of the castle being broken! After this, we–...” (??)

“I’m fine. Head down.” (Eisen)

“But, Beast King-sama, with this number...” (??)

“I will bring them down. You guys, devote yourselves to defend the civilian!” (Eisen)

“““Ye-yes!””” (??)

The beastkin left the room with their tails up. They might feel the Beat King’s anger.

The Beast King was clutching the fist as he looked at me with sorry eyes, but I shook my head and gently smiled.

“We just have to do our best. The plan is as before...” (Sirius)

“...Thank you.” (Eisen)

“Heh... are you going to fight?” (Belford)

“Of course! No matter how many dragons gather, I will slice them all!” (Reus)

“It’s fine to be brave, but do you think that I have reason to beat you guys? As for me, the most important thing is this experimental body...” (Belford)

“Are you going to run away!?” (Reus)

“You know, I’m not interested with battle junkies like you guys.” (Belford)

...That was unsavory.

Belford was only staying for the conversation, and he would escape as soon as this was over.

It would be easy to rescue Mea if he thought about getting revenge on me, but judging from the appearance, he completely had no hesitation to run away.

In addition, even if Fia and I attacked the enemies in mid air, we would be stopped by the surrounding Lindworms. Plus, I hadn’t confirmed Dragloss strength yet.

He was still wary of my shooting as usual, so... this was really a troubling situation.

However... I couldn’t forgive his atrocity. More than just making Mary as an experimental tool, I couldn’t overlook the kidnapping.

I regret that I couldn’t finish him in the past, but... the time was now.

Anyhow, I was going to do what I could.

There was only one chance, so... coordination was also necessary.

Then, I used called to inform the strategy.

Chapter 127

Those who aren't Afraid of Sky

What we should give top priority in this battle was to rescue Mea.

Next was not to let Belford to run away. It was too dangerous to let such an insane guy get away.

The enemies fire power were Belford and Dragloss whose strength was unknown and nearly twenty Lindworms. It was troublesome since all of them were flying in the sky.

Furthermore, there were Isabella and Keith who thought of us as enemies due to implication.

Well, let's leave those two to Reus and the Beast King as discussed earlier.

Since Grethe was still tired because of the fight against Emilia, she would focus on rescuing Mea.

Anyhow, the ones who were going to fight Belford would be me, the ladies and Hokuto.

Even though the difference in number was large, there was nothing to worry about if we weren't careless, but that would only work if there was no time limit.

The other side was obviously going to escape, so it would be tough to do battle while blocking his retreat.

Nevertheless... we had no choice but to do it.

"Are you going to run away!?" (Reus)

"You know, I'm not interested with battle junkies like you guys." (Belford)

While he was talking to Reus, I put together the strategy and informed the disciples through [Call] and secretly whispered the instructions to the Beast King. After that, we were prepared for the battle.

I waited until the time when the conversation between Reus and Belford ended...

“Well then, the King of the beastkin, I will fully utilize your daughter...” (Belford)

“Deploy!” (Sirius)

I started running while shooting [Magnum].

However, the magical bullet shot was easily prevented by Dragloss arm. It seemed that Belford was wary of [Magnum] since it was also due to its range, so it was an obvious result.

If I used [Anti-Materiel], it would surely shot Belford through its arm for sure, but it would be too strong since it could kill McDatt. Moreover, it was dangerous to Mea. Let's set it aside as a last resort.

First off, when I tried to close the distance while creating diversion, Isabella and Keith were standing in the way as expected.

“Keith, I'm here! Bear the pain!” (Reus)

“Do not move, Isabella!” (Eisen)

As for exchanging blows, Reus swung down his favorite sword at Keith while the Beast King extended his body to restrain Isabella.

I ran through those two on the side. I leaped from the destroyed walls and flew in the sky. As I drew closer to Belford, the surrounding Lindworms were attacking to stop my approach.

“Awoooo—-!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto easily surpassed from my side and loudly howled. It blew away the approaching Lindworms with a shock wave caused by the roar.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Let me borrow you!” (Sirius)

When the path was possible, Hokuto extended his tail as much as he could, and I

leaped further by using it as a foothold.

Since Hokuto flew along with the momentum of tail swing, I was getting closer to Belford just like an arrow.

“Don’t get in my way, Reus! I have to support McDatt for Mary’s sake!” (Keith)

“Stop it! Are you really think you’re doing this for Mea’s sake in this kind of situation!?” (Reus)

On the other hand, Reus seemed to be struggling for a bit.

Unlike the match during the midday earlier, they didn’t have to worry about breaking each other’s weapon. However, they were using favorite weapon to each other now. Since the ability difference was small, it seemed difficult to adjust blows to hold Keith back.

While exchanging blows, they shouted at each other.

“I will protect that girl. Move!” (Keith)

“Quit it! You’ll regret if you are doing whatever you want now! You need to wake up soon!” (Reus)

I entrusted Isabella to the Beast King, but I was a bit uneasy if he could suppress Isabella’s speed.

However, he should know her tendency since she was his wife. When I noticed, he stopped Isabella’s movement by hugging her.

Even so, Isabella unleashed punches and kicks, but the Beast King was persuading her without hesitation even though he received all attacks. It was probably that the force of the attack wasn’t good because of the hug, or perhaps, the Beast King was simply sturdy.

In other words, Isabella was more on speed while the Beast King on defend?

The Beast King occasionally did headbutt but it was easily avoided by Isabella. However, there seemed to be no problem even if he did it in that situation.

‘Let’s give undivided attention to that guy.’

“Are you serious? You know, you are challenging an air battle against these dragons.”
(Belford)

“I understand that they aren’t human, but this is something that I need to do.” (Sirius)

A single Lindworm approached from the side in the meantime, but Emilia who came late released an [Air Shot] against its face to repel it.

Emilia couldn’t fly through the sky like Fia, but she could freely move to certain extent by receiving the wind. She avoided the approaching Lindworms by using that movement, and on the contrary, she was able to fly in the air as a footpath to reduce the number of Lindworms.

Belford understood that it was dangerous to turn his back on me. So, Dragloss was trying to leave the castle while facing the front, but I was stopping them with a higher speed.

I confirmed the appearance of Dragloss again as I got closer, but it was more strange than expected.

It had three necks with red, blue and green colors and six arms. And six wings of each color on its back... no, it seemed like those wings were sewed. Since the body part was the only noticeable part with black scales, that would probably be a different kind of dragon.

To put it simply, it was like binding four different colors dragons together. There were manastones buried here and there around the body and a complicated magic formation was drawn. Perhaps, Dragloss was moving according to that magic formation. Moreover, it was controlling the Lindworms that were flying nearby.

“Damn... he is quicker than expected. Dragloss!” (Belford)

Even if the weapon couldn’t reach, [Magnum] was likely to reach at that distance, but breath of fire and wind was released from the three heads of Dragloss.

The range of the breath was wide, so I used [Air Step] and avoided while greatly descended. The breath, then, hit multiple Lindworms. It seemed that he didn’t care about the damage to the surroundings at all.

Although Emilia was within the range of the breath, she succeeded avoiding it. However, the range of the breath was longer than expected and it seemed that it reached the castle.

“I will not let you! Everyone, please!” (Reese)

However, when Reese activated Spirit Magic, the water from nearby fountain shot out and it became a shield to hold the breath.

Although the breath had a tremendous firepower, Reese seemed to have compressed the water considerably and the shield was able to withstand with some evaporation.

Moreover, after enduring the breath, when people thought that the water that stood in the air started to move as if it had a will, a violent water blew out and it was striking the Lindworms that were approaching the castle and blew them away.

“It is good if there is a river, but if that’s their number, I guess that it is alright with the fountain here.” (Reese)

The Lindworms were pushed back by the water and the damage seemed to be small, but at least, that was good enough as a support power.

Since the water of the fountain gushed out again and was being replenished as it was decreased, that side should be fine until Reese ran out of mana.

“It is my first time to see someone who can freely handle water to that extent. That seems to be an interesting experiment.” (Belford)

“Do you have time to spare?” (Sirius)

I descended and came around from under Dragloss and rose in a single stretch. I stopped in the air to block Belford’s escape path.

I was in a state of keeping [Air Step] activated at my feet, but as expected, Belford couldn’t hide surprises since I was like standing in the air.

“Ooh!? How did you do that!?” (Belford)

“Well... I’ll tell you if you return that girl.” (Sirius)

“That’s impossible. Hmm, is that a kind of magic? Aah, you guys are really interesting! I’ve decided, the next experimental bodies will be you guys!” (Belford)

“...Is it find to be calm? Look around you.” (Sirius)

Dragloss turned around and made Belford faced me with the castle behind me, but he wasn’t panic as ever.

When he turned around, Emilia was cutting the throat of the Lindworms with knife and magic. As for Hokuto, he reached to mid air by biting the tail of a Lindworm and he was displaying a splendid battle by attacking other Lindworms.

By the way, Belford noticed that his support power was decreasing, but it made me concern when he was still calm.

It might be because there was a hostage or he had prepared something.

“What’s wrong if the Lindworms is decreasing? My masterpiece, Dragloss, has no weakness, you know.” (Belford)

“If that’s the case, shall I try it?” (Sirius)

First off, I aimed for Dragloss wings with [Magnum] to stop the movement, but like before, it was shielded with the arms and tail. And the wound shot was immediately blocked and regenerated.

The reaction speed was also a threat, but that reaction speed to guard itself from this distance was considerably troublesome. That guy was really confident, was it?

However, to worry about this much was...

“...It is not exploding, huh?” (Sirius)

The [Magnum] just now was a bullet that released [Impact] upon landing, but for some reason, that didn’t happened.

Whether Belford noticed my doubt, he was stroking Dragloss while laughing.

“Well, thanks. This child favorite food is mana, you know?” (Belford)

“Could it be... absorption?” (Sirius)

“Although it is a compression of mana, your blow was a threat. When I created measure against it, the result was more than expected.” (Belford)

Dragloss had the characteristic of absorbing mana. Perhaps, the bullet earlier was absorbed by the body before it could emit impact.

It seemed to be almost a countermeasure against me. Thus, I had to accept this condition and I couldn't ignore its existence since it could directly accept it.

Although he was insane, he had the ability to create a monster that could use implication, and he was an enemy who might overturn a country as well. Should he feel honored... for me to be wary of such an opponent?

Anyhow, the effect of [Magnum] that was directly shot at it was light.

Since my priority was to rescue Mea, instead of approaching Belford, I...

“I worked hard on the defense. But, of course, defense is not everything.” (Belford)

“As expected of dragon species, is it?” (Sirius)

Since there were three heads on Dragloss, if I got a direct hit, it seemed I would be burned black in an instant, or being frozen to the body core, or blown away if got caught with the gust of wind... so it was hard to approach because three kinds of breaths were released constantly.

None of them was too difficult to break through. Anyhow, I flew around Dragloss and kept looking for opening while avoiding its wings that occasionally attacked me.

I shot [Magnum] several times while flying around, but even though I also aimed for Belford, it was all prevented by Dragloss and it didn't become a decisive blow.

I somehow succeeded to hold it because I was around, so should I wait until Emilia and Hokuto settled the Lindworms?

“Hey, what are you doing? You have been avoiding from a while ago, are you thinking for your companions to come?” (Belford)

But, Dragloss summoned Lindworms, right? That was because more of them appeared from above.

There were few others remained after Emilia and Hokuto took care of them, but... the number of the Lindworms returned to the original. I had no problem with the battle itself, but wasn't this a bit unfavorable situation?

As I moved in big way to avoid being caught by the breath, Belford was sighing as if he was too free.

"You are too persistent. I want to tell you this, but I don't have business with you now. Why don't you get out of my way?" (Belford)

"I refuse. I don't intend to let you escape and I have to get that girl back." (Sirius)

"You are so stubborn. I certainly think that it is bad to kill you, but neither this country nor the experimental body should be related to you who are adventurers, right? Why are you going this far?" (Belford)

"It's true that there is no relationship, but that girl is likely to be one of my disciples. More importantly, I don't feel good if I let you get away." (Sirius)

"That can't be helped. Well, if you die, it's also good for me to have your corpse." (Belford)

Then, I avoided breath of fire that was release to block my escape path, but I missed a bit the breath of ice that was released subsequently after, and the sense of left hand was a bit paralyzed.

Since it was a light frostbite, it would heal if I left it for a while. After that, I took a distance for a fresh start while restraining it with [Magnum].

"...I am a bit disappointed. Are you thinking of a countermeasure?" (Belford)

"..." (Sirius)

"No, is Dragloss too good? Anyhow, it had been hard for me to secure the dragons." (Belford)

"...I forgot to mention one thing." (Sirius)

“Hmm?” (Belford)

“Is it fine to only focus on me?” (Sirius)

“That’s obvious, isn’t it? Your range attacks are a threat... ooh!?” (Belford)

At that time, suddenly Dragloss body shook violently.

Belford, who was about to fall down from its back due to the shock, verified the surrounding and found that a wooden arrow was stuck in Dragloss body.

It was fine for him to be prepared for my long range attack, but unfortunately, we...

“We have one more sniper.” (Sirius)

When I turned toward the Arbitray castle, I could see Fia who caught up on the top of the castle and finished shooting arrows from the bow, Archerion.

Yup... my role wasn’t only to close off the way he could escape, I was also a decoy so that she could snipe from behind.

In addition to the ability of Archerion, the distance of the arrow Fia shot just now was greatly extended by the help of the Wind Spirits. Furthermore, since the tip of the arrow rotated like a drill due to wind wrapped around it, it gave a considerable impact and penetrating power.

Such an arrow stuck in one of the Dragloss neck, and two on its body, but... it didn’t fall from the air.

“Phew, that’s dangerous. I was about to drop the experimental body, you know. I was surprised to get hit by arrows at that distance, but for Dragloss to fall with these three arrows is–...” (Belford)

“It’s not really necessary to make you fall, you know? Our aim is to confine you.” (Sirius)

“What did you say... Dragloss!?” (Belford)

Suddenly, Dragloss couldn’t keep still in the air and it violently shook Belford on its back.

When he looked at it, numerous branches started to grow from the stabbed arrow, and that begin to hinder the movement by entangling Dragloss body.

“What’s this!? Where these branches coming from...” (Belford)

“You should look well. It is branches of a tree, and the stabbed arrow is a wooden arrow.” (Sirius)

The arrow Fia shot was close to a stick with a pointed tip, and it wasn’t an ordinary arrow with wings and feathers.

That was a special arrow born from Archerion. It absorbed mana from the enemies stabbed, and it would grow and the branches would spread to restrain movement.

Since it consumed mana as it sealed the movement, it was very handy, but since it was created from the bow itself, the advantage was that it took some time to produce one. By the way, as time went by, the efficacy went down, so it couldn’t be produced.

If it was a person, a single arrow would be good enough. However, the opponent this time was huge. Therefore, I had to earn a bit more time for her to produce more than one.

Although I was amazed at the countermeasure against [Magnum], I was concentrating on avoiding without serious attacking Dragloss for this reason.

Anyhow, the movement of Dragloss was sealed, and this was a chance as Belford attention swayed greatly.

It tried to turn to attack me, but... apparently, I made it in time.

“...I’m getting back Mary-sama.” (Grethe)

The only person who stealthily moved was Grethe and she jumped on Dragloss and stabbed a knife at Belford.

I was going to do that if Grethe didn’t come, but it seemed she was able to do it by stepping on Lindworms as footholds.

However...

“Ooh... you manage to come this far, huh.” (Belford)

“I can do it if it is this much. More importantly, return Mary-sama soon. Otherwise...” (Grethe)

“‘Otherwise’...what will happen then? Aren’t you planning to stab me with that knife? This McDatt is your employer, and he is a replacement of your parent.” (Belford)

“You’re wrong. You are... not McDatt-sama. The man who tries to kidnap Mary-sama is... my enemy!” (Grethe)

“He-help me, Grethe! I am... just being manipulated. It’s not my real intention!” (Belford)

“...The real McDatt-sama will never say such thing, and if it is him, he would tell it himself.” (Grethe)

“Oh my, is that so? But I can see you are trembling inside. Even though it was short, I’d been watching you through this guy... Come!” (Belford)

“!?” (Grethe)

“Hmm... eh? Grethe... are you nearby?” (Mea)

The moment Mea, who was sleeping due to drug and held by Belford, woke up, various tentacles jumped out of the flesh of the restrained Dragloss and attacked Grethe.

That slight opening creating from the disturbance was fatal. Grethe had no choice but to leap and escaped without looking aside.

It seemed that she managed to avoid the worst situation by that judgment, but Grethe fell to the ground while scattering blood all over. That might be due to the tentacles slightly injured her flanks.

It was a bit delayed, but by the time Mea strengthened her eyesight and saw that disastrous scene... that young girl’s cry reverberated around.

“Aa... aah!? Grethe-!?” (Mea)

Mea began to struggle while screaming, but she was put back to sleep when Belford

sprayed a powder at her mouth.

“A... uu...” (Mea)

“Phew... it’s troublesome if you make a noise. With that, can you leave us alone?”
(Belford)

{Sirius-sama! Leave Grethe-san to me!} (Emilia)

Since I heard the [Call] from Emilia, I left the falling Grethe to her and she would be fine.

At that time Dragloss started to shred hard the branches that entangled it. I guessed I should attack it now.

I tried to leave the situation to Grethe who seemed to have a relationship with McDatt, but... did the cunning part of him and the gentle part of him made her hesitated? From their conversation, I understood that McDatt was someone who liked a replacement of her parent, but... that was fatal, wasn’t it?

At the time when I thought whether I should decide to harm Mea soon... I shot [Magnum] at the neck of Dragloss.

“Oh my, what a wasteful struggle.” (Belford)

However, it didn’t only avoid the shot by moving the neck, it also prevent it by extending its arm and tail.

It seemed like a trivial attack, just like what he said, but my role was a decoy after all.

And the attack just now was...

“Oraaa-!” (Reus)

“Ma-maryy-!” (Keith)

...to turn its eyes away from Reus and Keith who were coming down from the sky. Their whole body was soaked. Apparently, they came flying by Reese’s water.

I couldn’t see sign where Keith was beaten, but it seemed that he had returned to a

sane state as he was wielding weapon against Dragloss.

It seemed that he was brought back by her sister's scream.

"Cheh! What a troublesome bunch!" (Belford)

Dragloss turned its head toward the sky to intercept them with breath attack, but a common arrow shot by Fia was sucked into its mouth and blocked it.

My [Magnum] looked weakened due to the countermeasures, but it was still a good thing if it received the hit.

The [Magnum] shot after Fia's attack gave a shock wave just before the impact, and since the neck greatly swayed, it had no time to unleash breath attack.

Even so... despite being desperate, those two were excessive. If it wasn't due to our backing, they would be burned black.

"Dorashaaaa-!" (Reus)

"Let's do it-!" (Keith)

Then, when the two fell, they swung their weapons together with the momentum of the fall, and they split the neck and wings of Dragloss.

There was one neck left, but it seemed that two of its wings were sliced at the root part. That caused Dragloss to greatly lost its balance and had finally begun to fall from the air.

"That's bad! Hurry up, regenerate the wings-..." (Belford)

"There!" (Sirius)

I was waiting for that moment when Belford completely lost focus from me.

With the image of a rubber bullet, I shot [Magnum] that emphasized on speed over power. The bullet directly struck on Belford arm that carried Mea.

As the shock and the unstable condition due to the descend overlapped, Belford finally let go Mea.

While preventing him from catching Mea again with [Magnum], I tried to extend [String] to get her, but... apparently, it wasn't necessary.

"Mary!" (Isabella)

Isabella flew completely like a falling meteor and she rescued Mea who was falling down. If Keith returned to sanity, I assumed that Isabella might as well the same.

She flew with tremendous acceleration, but... there was no problem especially when she had a suitable physical ability. Isabella flew too far and hit the forest. While she was hurt by branches, she kicked the trees to reduce the momentum. It seemed that the burden on Mea was kept to a minimum.

Goodness... her mother was strong. Well, I also understood that.

Dragloss that was falling down finally regenerated its wings. It remained airborne just before it hit the ground surface.

Belford who was relieved of that situation had a shadow approaching him.

"McDatt-!" (Eisen)

The identity of the shadow was the Beast King. He wielded his fists while coming down from the sky.

He seemed to be blown off by Fia's wind, but still, he was falling from the height of more than three stories building. Seriously, each and every one of them didn't mind about altitude.

As Belford was distracted by the situation of Dragloss, the countermeasure against the Beast King who came down as if he already anticipated it was completely delayed.

"That will definitely kill me-..." (Belford)

"Nuuaahhh-!" (Eisen)

It seemed that he was trying to appeal with the same desperate feelings like he did to Grethe, but that didn't work to the Beast King.

However... the Beast King was aiming for Dragloss.

The stroke of the whole body with the moment of the fall and the force created by a destructive power as if a meteor descended caused a shock wave that deal huge damage to the surroundings.

At least, the point of falling was at the castle battleground area.

As a result, the damage to the castle was minimal, but all walls of the audience seats were destroyed and a large crater appeared at the place where the Beast King hit it. That was a blow of fury.

“Ooh... that looks like Lior-Jiichan.” (Reus)

“Old man, you’re overdoing it.” (Keith)

The beast king quietly stood at the center of the crater and there were only meat pieces that were thought to be Dragloss scattered around.

After a while, the piece of meat began to melt and the figure of Dragloss lost its shadow and shape.

Since I couldn’t feel the reaction any more when I looked for it through [Search], it seemed that Dragloss had been completely knocked by the Beast King assault.

Isabella was also strong, but the Beast King held an equal strength... what a scary couple.

When I turned sideways, Reus and Keith had safely landed on the ground.

Well, Reus can used [Air Step] for several times, and Keith was lucky because he caught a Lindworm while falling down.

Keith, who looked sad, quietly muttered as he approached the Beast King.

“McDatt... I don’t really understand the situation, but you should be satisfied if you were killed by father. Rest in peace–...” (Keith)

“You got it wrong, Keith. You should look at that direction.” (Eisen)

“Eh?” (Keith)

It was bad for Keith who was in the mood, but I caught Belford with [String] before he was struck by the Beast King.

“He is safe, is it? That’s good... hmm.” (Keith)

“What? What is that bashful reaction for?” (Eisen)

“Uh, you’re noisy!” (Keith)

“What? Do you want to have a go!?” (Eisen)

I left the two who started fighting each other. Despite many miscalculations and changes in circumstances, everyone worked well.

Especially the Beast King. Even though he was higher status than me, it really helped since he moved according to my instruction.

If the Beast King wasn’t going to kill Dragloss, I doubt that I could secure Belford as I was going to use [Anti Materiel].

I overlooked Belford who was stunned while being bound by [String]. He was probably received the shock wave of the Beast King blow.

“Now, the rest is what to do with you...” (Sirius)

There were many things to be settled, but I finally saw the end of this incident.

Next was the last bit of work.



Presenting Hokuto – Unparalleled Compilation

There was one thing after another, and this time Hokuto-kun was fighting along his Master at the Arbitray castle.

Standing in front of Hokuto was a flock of Lindworms and there were around twenty of them.

“Hokuto... I leave the small fries to you.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Leaving the rescue of Mea to the Master, Hokuto-kun was entrusted with the Lindworms.

There was absolutely no dissatisfaction.

The side job was a job for the subordinates.

He was rather motivated because he was entrusted by the Master. Should he do this with an intention to kill?

It would be a difficult aerial battle, but Hokuto-kun leaped out without hesitation.

As the battle began, Hokuto-kun howled in order to make way for the Master.

He secured the front with a shock wave caused by the howl, used his tail as the foothold of the Master and set him off to fly toward the Boss.

From there, Hokuto-kun full-scale battle began.

No, it was trampling rather than battle.

It was more advantageous for the Lindworms in mid air, so he had to approach them to attack.

He twisted his body and avoided attack. He countered with claws and fangs, and sometimes like the Master, he made a foothold with mana and attack from there.

He completely tore the Lindworms one after another like tearing a dragonfly.

Originally, the Lindworms would run away due to Hokuto-kun’s bloodlust and the difference in power, but it seemed that it were not able to do so due to the mana released by the Boss.

However, Hokuto-kun didn’t show any mercy.

This was also a survival of the fittest.

Although it was in the mid air, Hokuto-kun bit the tail of a Lindworm and swung it

away.

The Lindworm had teary eyes because of that intense giant swing. He didn't know the detail on how dragons spilled tears, but that was the feeling.

Of course, he swung around couple of times, threw it and it hit another Lindword. He also hit the ground like a body slam while biting its neck.

From the side, it looked like a pro wrestling.

If Isabella-san had a free time, she might feel very excited.

An additional Lindworm joined mid way, but it didn't change what Hokuto-kun was doing.

Bit, clawed, rotated and threw it.

It was a strange sight where a wolf flew in mid air, but Hokuto-kun was doing his best to do the side job.

Chapter 128

The Conclusion of the Incident

Despite the damage of some parts of the castle and to some people, it was miraculous that no one was killed when the battle ended.

However, as for the matter of huge monster and the herds of Lindworms attacks, it was happened to the extent that the country collapsed.

Because of that, the area surrounding of the castle was noisy even though it was late at night. As our battle ended, the soldiers and the attendants of the castle began to move restlessly at the same time. They were busy confirming the damage and cleaning up the corpses of the Lindworms.

In the meantime, we were gathered in one corner of the battleground that had already become wreckage.

“...I understood the situation in general. Anyhow, is it alright if we don’t touch McDatt?”
(Keith)

“That’s right. Other than him mentioning his identity, we don’t know anything beyond that.” (Eisen)

The ones who overlook Belford, who possessed McDatt, were the surprised Beast King and Keith.

Belford was now put on the ground, being tied up by [String] and we were surrounding him.

I still wanted to ask him questions, and since there was a possibility of the consciousness might be taken over similar to McDatt if he was unnecessarily touched, I told everyone not to come near to him.

“What are you going to do, Aniki?” (Reus)

“Sirius-sama, you told Beast king-sama that you were aiming for McDatt-san, it

seemed you were considering something, wasn't it?" (Emilia)

"Yeah. I'm not sure if I can save him, but if I leave things as it is, I would feel bad about it later." (Sirius)

'Let's put together the information for a bit.'

From the conversations that took place before the battle, it seemed that McDatt was still alive. He was just being possessed.

In order not to make people of the surroundings suspected him, he told that he acted similar like the real McDatt except when necessary.

Perhaps, Belford was on the surface when McDatt's consciousness was completely sleeping, or he was made to think so by implication or he was tricked so as not to have a feeling out of place.

"Anyway, if I can force Belford out from the body, McDatt is highly likely to be safe." (Sirius)

With the exception of his name, his existence was puzzling, but I might be able to find something if I touched his body and [Scan]ed him.

When I told that to everyone, the one that displayed the most response was the Beast King.

"Although it has been decided, I would like to help you if I can. Do you want me to do anything?" (Eisen)

"You don't have to do anything. I'll be doing as much as I can." (Sirius)

He was tied up with [String] at present, but this was also considered as touching him through magical threads. But since I didn't feel anything, it was unlikely to be possessed by touching him through mana.

That might be due to him being fainted, but since there was no progress in this matter, it seemed that we had to make contact with him even though it was dangerous.

Incidentally, as we had decided, Belford, who was fainted, woke up and vaguely stared at us.

“Uh... Beast King-... sama?” (McDatt/Belford)

“Is that you... McDatt?” (Eisen)

“Yes... I am. Apparently I had done something unforgivable while I was possessed.”
(McDatt/Belford)

Whether he had decided that there was no need to care about McDatt’s consciousness since the identity was out, it looked like he remembered all the events of today.

He remembered the events like implicating Isabella and Keith to bring Mea to him, using magic tools at the top of the castle to give instructions to Dragloss, and he learned that Belford was moving doing all that behind the scenes.

“The culprit is not you, but that guy. Leaving that aside, what happened to Belford? We can’t talk like this you know. He is still inside you, right?” (Eisen)

“...Since I don’t feel that unpleasant feeling, he may have disappeared from me.”
(McDatt/Belford)

“What!? Where is he now!?” (Eisen)

“I remember it is when I was falling. It was when Beast King-sama leaped at the end, but since that guy thought that you were targeting me, he seemed to move onto the monster underfoot just before that attack.” (McDatt/Belford)

If it was so, Dragloss, which was the monster underfoot, already become a junk of meat. That meant that Belford had already disappeared.

Although he was an enemy who aimed at his sister, Keith seemed unable to hide the unsatisfactory feeling.

Accordingly, when I looked at the presences approaching this direction, Isabella, who leaped into the forest in order to save her daughter, came back with Mary.

Although it was within walking distance when she rescued Mea, it took her long time to return back her. She probably leaped a considerable distance and it looked like she was so desperate trying to save the daughter to that extent.

“...I’m back.” (Isabella)

“Hmm, have you returned. It seems Mary is also safe.” (Eisen)

“Of course. There is not even a single wound on this child.” (Isabella)

I could hardly feel the emotion as ever, but the expression was obviously different.

Isabella pulled Mea into her chest while rubbing her cheeks against, while looking ecstatic. To be honest, it was quite suspicious. I had a feeling that the sleeping Mea was having a nightmare.

“Mother... I’m so jealous! Change to me!” (Keith)

“Nope.” (Isabella)

With envy feeling, Keith rushed over, but Isabella took a distance and not letting him to get close. It looked like she was moving in quite violent manner, but she made used of high technique so as not to wake Mea up.

I thought that the Beast King would react if Mea was involved, but he didn’t try to leave McDatt from the beginning.

“...Hey, McDatt. Are you already alright?” (Eisen)

“Yes. I am sincerely thinking that I would like to serve Beast King-sama from now on while making up the crimes I have done. However... I am ready to leave this country if you say that you can’t forgive me.” (McDatt/Belford)

“There is no need to leave. As I said earlier, everything is caused by him.” (Eisen)

“That’s very generous of you... thank you very much. Well then, I would like to be treated immediately, would you please release me?” (McDatt/Belford)

“I can’t do that.” (Eisen)

McDatt requested his release, but the Beast king plainly rejected him.

Hmm... I guessed he was a doting King after all.

“Ooh, as expected of Beast King-sama. Are you thinking about the possibility that that guy is still in me? If you doubt that he really has disappeared, so it may be better to

put me in jail for a while.” (McDatt/Belford)

“How long are you, bastard, going to fool around?” (Eisen)

“Th-that’s not true! Just put me in prison...” (McDatt/Belford)

“There is no need to put you in prison! How well do you know about the relationship between me and McDatt? Do you think I would believe that you are the real person by imitating that face and voice!?” (Eisen)

“Father!? Is that true?” (Keith)

“Keith. If you succeed the king, you are not only training your body, but also need to train the eyes that see people. Our enemy is still remained inside McDatt.” (Eisen)

I thought that Belford might still be in there because of the disturbance of mana, but I had no confidence at the degree of the Beast king.

As the Beast King stood among his people and leading them, I guessed it was different because they were friends.

“Is that so!? I was somehow concern about it since earlier... was it because of that?” (Reus)

It seemed that Reus thought that it was doubtful with his sixth sense which I didn’t understand well.

Due to the sharp gazes from us and the Beast King, the weak expression which was displayed on McDatt’s face changed to Belford’s kind of smile.

“...This is more than I expected. Should I say that you really are the King?” (Belford)

“You should know about people more. Well, you probably don’t understand well since you’re thinking of people as materials for experiment.” (Eisen)

“Do you think I will change if I hear to such words? I don’t deny that I was having fun, but I was doing it with the corresponding resolution. You should know more about the thought of a lunatic here.” (Belford)

“Oi, we have already cleared up your monster and the Lindworms. Do you understand

the situation?” (Keith)

“Indeed, I do. Look, you can do it if you want to do it, right?” (Belford)

He asked Belford whether he understood the situation, but on the other hand, Belford became defiant and that made Keith to be agitated.

“My greatest masterpiece, Dragloss, was torn down, and I was arrested in such a way. It is my complete defeat.” (Belford)

“You accept the defeat, is it? If that’s the case, get out from that body immediately. No, before that, spit whatever you have done so far.” (Eisen)

“Huh? Why do I have to go out? I am indeed defeated, but I hold resentment for interfering with my experiment and Dragloss. If I have to disappear, I will do that after accomplishing my goal regardless how small it is.” (Belford)

“Bastard!” (Eisen)

“No matter how much you threaten me, it is pointless since you don’t know my true identity. And if I don’t go out on my accord, I will keep this man until he dies. In other words, if you make me die, I have no choice but to get rid of this man!” (Belford)

He wasn’t going to do it, probably... or he was bluffing.

Plus, I didn’t really mind if he was really died. In the first place, he said that he was a death-transcending entity, and perhaps, the sense of that was different.

If it was about death, it did give unpleasant feeling... as if he died after getting involved in grand scale matter.

“Beast King-sama. Do-don’t worry about me. This kind of existence... I can’t forgive him...” (McDatt)

“McDatt!?” (Eisen)

“Oops, it’s no good. That might be the real voice just now? Hey, come on. If the man himself allows you to do it, will that be alright?” (Belford)

“Kuh! McDatt... I’m sorry.” (Eisen)

“Father...” (Keith)

I guessed that he had already made the decision. The Beast King clenched his fist while breathing heavily.

...This wasn't the time to leisurely look at this. I feel bad since he made up his mind, but that would be the last resort. First off, it was still not too late to try many things.

Then, I stood in front of the Beast King when he was about to raise his fist to forcibly interrupt him.

“Please wait, Beast King-sama. Didn't you say a while ago that you would leave him to me?” (Sirius)

“Hmm... sorry. It seems he manages in provoking me. I'm still inexperienced.” (Eisen)

“Your friend's life is depending on you after all. Well then, please stay away from me, just to be sure.” (Sirius)

Not only the Beast King, the disciples and Hokuto who were beside me also took a step back. After that, I stood in front of Belford, who was amazed as if he was let down.

He was also a lunatic culprit who only scheme if he benefited from it, and he put up an annoying face at me.

“Cheh... if you weren't here, everything would have gone well. So, what are you going to do to me?” (Belford)

“Obviously, I'm going to examine you. I guess that you are going to bite if I do it from the front, so I'm going to do it from the back of your body.” (Sirius)

“Are you going to touch me? You're expressly offering your body to me, aren't you?” (Belford)

“That is bluff, right? Too bad, I already have some idea about the requirements for possessing people, you know.” (Sirius)

And then, I tried to touch with my hand after going to his back which was the blind spot, but before that...

“Reus, come here for a bit.” (Sirius)

“What is it, Aniki?” (Reus)

“If you judge that I am possessed by him... kill me without hesitation.” (Sirius)

“Eh... Aniki?” (Reus)

I should prepare for the worst case scenario.

The reason I whispered that and gave instruction only to Reus because his intuition was sharp beyond words. To put it simply, there was a possibility that he would surpass me in the future.

I would kill myself if possible, and I probably should also leave it to Hokuto.

To be honest, that was a harsh instruction, but... this was also an experience.

However, that would be the worst assumption. I wasn't desperate. I was just making a move with a certain degree of certainty.

“Well, do that if I'm possessed. If you stand next to me, I want you to know that you need to be prepared for that.” (Sirius)

“Aniki. I...” (Reus)

“It's alright, you don't have to decide it now. Besides, if my assumption is correct, I think that he can't move his consciousness if I touch him. So, you don't have to worry.” (Sirius)

According to the story, it seemed that the entity moved from the previous body when McDatt chest was bitten.

In other words, he possessed through a mucosal contact...

“Or he was embedding something... either way.” (Sirius)

I touched Belford's back after Reus separated from him, but nothing happened as expected.

As I confirmed nothing happen, I used [Scan] while sharpening my senses, and... I caught a reaction that in a position which was slightly off the heart.

“...Found it. Is that your core?” (Sirius)

The situation was totally different, but it felt a bit nostalgic.

At that time, it was certainly... well, Reese asked for my helped, and I took the thing that was embedded in her sister’s arm.

“I’m not sure what the reason is, but Belford... your identity is a manastone that is embedded in the chest, right?” (Sirius)

“You... who are you, really?” (Belford)

“Well? I am your enemy, and that is for certain.” (Sirius)

When the entity bit by using its previous body, it put the manastone into the tooth. It seemed that was how this situation started.

Belford was violently trembling only for a moment because of my findings, but then, he had a fearless smile immediately.

“...It is splendid since you are able to find my true identity, but what can you do about it? Are you going to gouge the chest to take me out? I wonder if this guy can live in such a state–...” (Belford)

“I know a full detail about the structure of human body. If I shoot straight at this angle, I will not hit the heart, but I can still shoot your manastone.” (Sirius)

There were many examples that people were saved even if the chest was shot with a gun.

The bullet wasn’t only goes off the vital parts, it could miraculously penetrate the body without damaging important blood vessels.

Of course, if it didn’t follow with a subsequent treatment, it could cause bleeding to death or infection...

“Reese. Please prepare for the treatment.” (Sirius)

“Yes, leave it to me!” (Reese)

We had Reese who excelled in therapeutic magic.

It was impossible for Reese to perform a direct surgery like cutting and connecting the body, but the ability of treating wounds already surpassed me.

As soon as I shot it out and the treatment with Reese magic began, the small hole in the chest would be healed immediately.

“...There is an existence like you, huh?” (Belford)

“Everything is overcome due to your self-conceit.” (Sirius)

I wasn't sure if I could remove it, but it would have been different if the manastone was closer to the heart.

Hokuto and Reus pressed Belford's body down since we judge that it was fine to touch him, but surprisingly, he was quiet. Did he understand that he could no longer escape because he knew the penetration power of [Magnum]?

Then, I was concentrating mana on the fingertips while paying attention to the release angle, Belford sighed as if he had accepted that notion.

“What an unusual ability. You and I are the same...” (Belford)

“...In terms of being out of an ordinary person, sure, we are the same.” (Sirius)

“Yeah. The existence that is out of ordinary like you and me will be feared by the surrounding. They will regard us as dangerous, and we are destined to be targeted from all over the world. You will give in to the darkness of the world, and the only future you'll have is despair.” (Belford)

“Despair... is it?” (Sirius)

It could be said that what he said wasn't wrong in a way.

It was the instinct of man to be afraid to those powerful and those who held an unknown power.

But... to despair...?

I had tasted such a feeling to the point that I hate it so much in the previous life.

However, I didn't overcome the isolation feeling with Shishou and the enemy lines in battles.

Moreover, I was called the world's strongest in the previous life, but if I changed the perspective, it also meant that I had a lot of enemies. Hence, I was used to be hated and targeted.

Besides...

"What about being scared with the future that doesn't proceed the way you want? After all, you and I are not the same, you know?" (Sirius)

I didn't know what happened to him in the past, but I had something clearly different from him.

"Well? I wonder if the delusion of selfishness is over." (Fia)

"We will not make him feel despaired. It's because Sirius-san is not alone!" (Reese)

"Sirius-sama has us with him. There is no way he will walk over the path of solitude." (Emilia)

"Whether it is despair or anything, I will slice trivial things like that!" (Reus)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

My techniques were also tempered, but in the previous life, I survived by trusting my companions and partner.

That didn't change even after I reincarnated in a different world.

I had disciples who trusted and supported the current me. They were my companions and my families.

"Beside, if you stand before me, it is just a matter of eliminating you with full power. Do you think that you can shake us with the last few pointless talks?" (Sirius)

“Hummmph! You’re impertinent until the end, is it? Your name... can you say it one more time?” (Belford)

“...Sirius.” (Sirius)

“Sirius. Live and struggle as far as you can, alright!” (Belford)

“...Pointless until the end, huh.” (Sirius)

I was slightly amazed.

Such a thing was common when it was about life.

Since it was dangerous to crush a manastone in his body, I shot [Magnum] that was squeezed out, and the manastone came out together with blood from the back of McDatt.

“Now!” (Sirius)

“Everyone, please! Healing water that connects life...” (Reese)

“Yes!” (Emilia)

“Ouu!” (Reus)

McDatt was wrapped in healing water caused by Reese’s magic and at the same time, the blade of wind Emilia unleashed from the side to the magic stone that danced in the air. Finally, Reus’ greatsword was swung down and the mana stone shattered.

It was a disappointing way to end it, but the vexing expression he made at the end was really impressive. Even though the face was McDatt’s...

Reese’s treatment ended after a while. When I reported that McDatt was only fainted but still breathing, the Beast King let out a deep breath as if he was relieved.

“I see. With this, it’s all over.” (Eisen)

“Yes. McDatt-san will probably wake up tomorrow, but I’m not sure if he remembers the time when he was manipulated. And please bear in mind, I think that this has strong effect on his mind, so...” (Sirius)

“Hmm, that would be my job. Nevertheless, this country may have been destroyed if you aren’t here. I don’t know how to return the favor.” (Eisen)

“I would say that this is a result of accidental development. Besides... this is my destiny.” (Sirius)

“By the way, what about the state of the princess that is said to be the cause of all this?” (Fia)

In the words of Fia, everyone looked at Mea, but the princess was sleeping with a gentle look as she was embraced by her mother.

Mea’s secret was revealed because of Belford, but I was really glad since she was put into sleep because I judged that it was still early for her to know the fact.

It was troubling if she misunderstood that she was loved because of her ability that attracted the surroundings. It might be due to the ability, but at least, Mea’s family and the surrounding people genuinely loved her.

I had to tell her about that secret before long, but... I would wait for now until the situation calmed down a bit more.

Anyway, for now, I was really glad that I could protect that gentle sleeping face.

“...Cute girl.” (Isabella)

“Dang it, what do you mean... well, my sister is still the best!” (Keith)

“I must give you reward for saving not only McDatt, but also my daughter.” (Eisen)

“Reward? I can think of several requests, but can I inform you tomorrow? Now, we are all tired.” (Sirius)

“Sure thing. I also need to calm down a bit, so I should take a day off.” (Eisen)

“For the time being, if it is necessary, I would like to ask for a spacious room where I can sleep at ease.” (Sirius)

“Hmm! Let’s prepare the best room!” (Eisen)

The Beast King summoned a nearby attendant, and asked him to prepare a room as requested.

After that, we did few things and errands that required immediate action while waiting the room to be prepared, and then, we finally got a break.

Like this... while having various wounds, Belford's ambition was crushed.



"...Is it morning already?" (Sirius)

By the time our businesses were done, it was already the next day. The fatigue of the body disappeared with the thanks to the short sleep. It was already morning when I looked out of the window.

The place where I was at present was the largest room in the castle. It was also a special room to be used by other envoys.

There were several big beds enough for two people in that room, and I was lying on one of them.

"...That's weird." (Sirius)

When turned to the sound of sleeping breathing on my left, there was Emilia, and when I turned on the other side, I could see the calm sleeping face of Reese and Fia.

As I mentioned earlier, I didn't went to bed together with them.

Hokuto was lying beside the bed and Reus was sleeping in the next bed.

"Yesterday, I certainly slept alone..." (Sirius)

After being guided into this room and being told that I could use as much as I wanted, I got into the bed after taking care of my body. Together with the softness of the bed and the fatigue, I instantly fell asleep.

I remembered that I kicked out Emilia and Fia from getting bed together, but it was a fact that when I wake up, I was lying together with three people.

How should I put it... even though the bed was large enough, it was crowded and cramped... Well, everyone was sleeping peacefully.

It was a pleasant situation as a man, but as a man, waking up in this situation was demanding.

Hokuto also raised his upper body at the same time as mine, but he slowly stood up when he saw my situation.

“...Woof.” (Hokuto)

‘Hey, Hokuto... don’t try to read the air and carry Reus out of the room.’

There would be discussions about reward recognition with the Beast King and also the cleanup related to Belford after today’s breakfast. As expected, now, it was a bit...

“...Hmm? Oh my... are you awake, Sirius?” (Fia)

“Aah, good morning, Fia. By the way, what kind of situation is this?” (Sirius)

“Good morning. Like I said earlier, you were bad, you know?” (Fia)

According to Fia... it seemed that the ladies questioned the details I told Reus before touching Belford last night, and they knew it now.

It seemed that was done after I slept, but being interrogated by the three sisters, Reus was certainly unable to keep the secret.

“Even though it was a presumption, I felt anxious when listening to it. It feels like you’re making light of your life.” (Fia)

“I’ve said about that a couple times so far, and I’d like you to get used to it. Was Fia sleeping together because you felt uneasy?” (Sirius)

“I was just taking advantage. Look, it is not possible for everyone to sleep together unless it is such a time.” (Fia)

She laughed at it with her tongue slightly out as if she succeeded in her prank.

That pleasant smile was suddenly disappeared, and Fia was looking at me with a

slightly serious expression.

“I don’t know what will happen in the future, and I will not say that it is bad to prepare for the situation when you are gone. However, if I was told like that, it couldn’t be helped to get anxious.” (Fia)

“I don’t really intend to die, but I have this habit of thinking because the influence of the previous life. Besides, even if I’m gone, I think that everyone will definitely overcome it.” (Sirius)

“Well... we definitely can live with your will and thought. I am probably convinced because I may live for a long time, but these two would end up lonely, right?” (Fia)

“...I won’t deny that. If that happens, Princess Lifell and his father will hit me even in the next world.” (Sirius)

“That’s why, be sure to live until you leave children. As long as we have children, they can fill the loneliness when you left us behind.” (Fia)

“Haha, aren’t you like a sister today?” (Sirius)

“Oh my? Even if you add the amount of years lived in the previous life, I am still a sister, you know?” (Fia)

Fia was slightly more than two hundred years old, so she was older than I who had been reincarnated once.

As I scratched my head with the feeling of being completely got me, I noticed Fia brought herself before my eyes.

“So, why don’t you seriously think about having children from now on? When I look at Mea and Isabella, I feel like having a child.” (Fia)

“...Give me back my admiration feeling toward you. Could it be that you were planning all this before doing it?” (Sirius)

“That’s rude. Everything is my true feeling. It seems that there is still time for breakfast, so why don’t we try it out as a morning exercise?” (Fia)

“Stop that! These two are likely to join mid way, so try to think of it. And Reus is also

there.” (Sirius)

“Hokuto. This is an important matter for the future of your Master, so please don’t let anyone enter, alright.” (Fia)

“Woof.” (Hokuto)

‘I told you, Hokuto, don’t grab Reus and leave me!’

To utilize Hokuto’s mentality for my sake... she was terribly scary but reliable woman.

Goodness. I was happy since she was asking for it, but...

“Hmm... eh? It is somewhat noisy-... say, what are you two trying to do!?” (Reese)

“I see... I understood the situation. Well then, I will also...” (Emilia)

“Come on, you too, hold him with both hands!” (Fia)

“Wait, Hokuto, ‘House’! You guys need to get hold of yourselves!” (Sirius)

‘That is that, this is this.’

It was about the location, and I also wanted to do it in moderation.



After that, I somehow managed to escape from ladies and now, I came to the bathhouse of the castle with Reus and Hokuto.

I was tired yesterday and I didn’t get to wipe my body. Plus, there was still time before breakfast.

It was the only bathhouse in the castle and it was spacious. When I looked out from the window, I noticed that there was a luxurious open air bathhouse.

I thought that no one was there since it was early in the morning, but the Beast King and Keith were in the bath.

“Ooh... you guys also are coming for morning bath? By the way, were you able to sleep

well since the room was prepared in a hurry?" (Eisen)

"Yes, it was a nice room for us." (Sirius)

There were various things happened and it didn't get settled down, but I was pleased with the wonderful softness of the bed.

"What, I haven't returned the favor when it is only that. Don't hesitate to ask for something else if you need it." (Eisen)

"Thank you very much. Well, this is too soon, but I would like you to separate the rooms by gender or give me a single room." (Sirius)

"Aah... is that so? I'm sorry, I wasn't attentive enough. I heard that the ladies are your lovers, but it will be hard to invite them if you are all in a room altogether." (Eisen)

Although the Beast King convinced by a person at a time, far from being invited, on the contrary, I was being assaulted... but I couldn't say that.

"Hey, Reus. Although you are smaller than me, how on earth do you have that kind of strength?" (Keith)

"According to Aniki, if the muscle is too big, it will hinder the movement, so occasionally, it is necessary to squeeze it." (Reus)

As Keith and Reus were getting to know each other, the Beast King and I were talking about the matter last night while immersing in the bath.

"The damage to the castle is numerous, but if the attendants are safe, they will be able to fix it soon. Also, in this morning, I found a suspicious passageway in the McDatt's room, but as you say, I told everyone not to enter it on their own." (Eisen)

"Is that so? More importantly, I'm sorry for saying this even though I am an outsider in this matter." (Sirius)

"Don't worry about it. You were right, if it was that guy, it was highly likely that he was working on something. Either way, I want to ask for your cooperation." (Eisen)

I considered that there was a research facilities if he was working behind the scenes here, and somehow something like that was found.

Well, the reason I told him not to let anyone investigated as they please was due to the possibility of explosion and destruction of evidence if they tried to investigate poorly. That was happened in Parade. The underground was completely buried in order to destroy the evidence.

‘Anyhow, since nothing come out from the entrance, let’s investigate with the Beast King after having breakfast.’

“Next is... McDatt-san, right?” (Sirius)

“Hmm, the implication had been untied. Although I couldn’t take my eyes off him for a while, it seemed that he was recovering.” (Eisen)

McDatt remembered the time when the consciousness was snatched by Belford. He asked himself to be put in the prison or he might try to suicide because of self-loathing.

The Beast King continuously convinced him that he was possessed. So, after explaining the situation to the surroundings, he resigned from the job of educating Mea. Now, he was devoting himself as the king’s aide, and it seemed that he was trying to forget the bad feeling.

“Fortunately, Mary remembered McDatt was possessed. Thanks to that, she isn’t scared at him. Sometimes, he called Mary to cheer her up He will back to normal soon.” (Eisen)

It seemed tough, but I would leave it to his friend, the Beast King, and there would be no problem.

“Well, here is a bathhouse. Let’s stop the difficult talks here. Let’s talk about it after getting out from the bath later.” (Eisen)

“Well. We are taking break after all.” (Sirius)

More than anything, this bathhouse was really spacious.

I went through considerable hardship and since I was able to get into this place, I was just going to slowly enjoy this for now.

“Gu... uoooooh!” (Reus)

““Haaaa!”” (Keith)

While watching Keith and Reus somehow started arm-wrestling, I comfortably enjoyed the bath.



Extra/Bonus

There was an outdoor bath in the bathhouse, and it seemed that the women's bath was over that high towering wall.

At the moment, the ladies of the house came with me and a fierce voice could be heard from the other side of the wall.

In such a case, those people who tried to peek were likely to appear, but...

“Peeping? I will be killed if I do it.” (Reus)

“I am true to my wife.” (Eisen)

“I am not interested in the opposite sex other than my sister.” (Keith)

Regardless of the Beast king, I judged that the prince was dangerous in various ways.

Though it felt cute to look at it, did I feel sorry for him not having desires? No... even so, was it impossible?

And I...

“Well then, Sirius-sama. I'm going to wash your back.” (Emilia)

“...Aah.” (Sirius)

Since Emilia was intruding the men's section, this wouldn't be peeping anymore.

It was already futile to say this, so I gave up and let Emilia washed my back. Generally, I was the one who suppose to ask that, but this was also our daily routine.

Emilia was wearing proper cloth for bathing, but since the body line was clearly

visible, it felt awkward in various ways.

“Nee-chan, you’re sneaky, you know! I was going to wash Aniki’s back!” (Reus)

“Hmm... as expected, I’m good with my wife.” (Eisen)

“If Mary grows up to her level, there will be many insects trying to come closer. If I don’t work hard...” (Keith)

No... he was going to be alright.

Rather, I felt that Emilia came in since she understood all that.

“Well then, Sirius-sama. Next, I will wash you with my body.” (Emilia)

“Wait a sec!? Where did you learn such a technique!?” (Sirius)

“Shishou taught me the other day. She said that it was a man’s dream and it was an indispensable technique as attendant.” (Emilia)

“Shishou!?” (Sirius)

Eventually... I couldn’t take a bath at all.

I swore that I would pour a tea that brewed unreasonably later on Shishou’s knife.

At that time, Hokuto was...

“...Woof.” (Hokuto)

He was soaked in the open air bath while enjoying the moment.



Extra/Bonus 2

NG Scene

“Now!” (Reus)

“Everyone, please! Healing water that connects life...” (Reese)

“Yes!” (Emilia)

“Ouu!” (Reus)

McDatt was wrapped in healing water caused by Reese’s magic and at the same time, the blade of wind Emilia unleashed from the side to the magic stone that danced in the air...

“-Aah” (Sirius)

It got out.

“Leave it to me, Nee-chan!” (Reus)

And the greatsword that Reus swung down... shook the sky.

“...I think that it is impossible for that small manastone.” (Reus)

“Well. It is smaller than expected.” (Emilia)

“...You guys, shall we have a little talk?” (Sirius)

Chapter 129

Because You are not Alone

Several days had passed since we stayed in the Arbitray's castle.

"Good morning, Sirius-sama." (Emilia)

After waking up with Emilia's voice as usual, I slowly stretched out my body and drank the coffee she brewed.

She prepared clothes in the meantime, and I changed to a new clothing when it was readied.

"I feel like I am a noble or royalty because of the location." (Sirius)

Currently, the room which was assigned to me was a room that was a slightly wider for me to use alone.

Incidentally, Reus also got himself a private room and the ladies were together assigned to a room for three people.

I would be fine if I was in the same room as Reus, so I told the Beast King that it was alright to use a suitable room for other guards, but he prepared me a nice room since I was the country's benefactor.

"But Sirius-sama is not interested in the lives of nobility and royalty, right?" (Emilia)

"Yeah, even though it is luxurious, I don't want to live a confined life. It's good for me to be together with the disciples and have enough money to eat normally." (Sirius)

"Yes. I'm also happy because I can take care of Sirius-sama like this." (Emilia)

Well, thanks to that as well, I felt good when seeing a very refreshing appearance of Emilia in this morning.

After stroking Emilia's head, I left the room and headed to the castle's battleground.



“Uwaaaa!?” (Reus)

“Daahh!?” (Keith)

Together with Emilia, I went to the battleground where rubbles had been cleaned up. There, I saw a scene of Reus and Keith’s head sticking to the ground.

Well... I was getting used to their agony voices that echoed from early morning. It seemed that some guards who alternated duty hours also had the same.

That was a scene of Reus and Keith challenged Isabella for mock battle. It was the result of Isabella’s ability in perfecting German Suplex and the evolution of Backdrop, that was anomaly until now, with own intuition.

As Isabella nodded in satisfaction, she slowly came to our direction after confirming our appearance.

“...Good morning.” (Isabella)

“Good morning. How’s your day?” (Sirius)

“Still not enough... I think? But, today is still the first time after all.” (Isabella)

Hmmm... that was the first time they ate that technique? Yesterday, they were hit to the ground twice until i came.

As I expected, Reus was accumulating experience by repeatedly challenging Isabella.

Next was the mock battle where Reus and Keith would fight me. When I was warming up while waiting for their revival, I noticed that Isabella was staring at me.

“...What is it?” (Sirius)

“...I want you to teach me more techniques.” (Isabella)

“Do you mean pro wrestling techniques?” (Sirius)

Isabella was expressionless, but she nodded greatly.

Apparently, the Queen was really interested in pro wrestling technique. The impetus of that was because Reus used it, but he also didn't think that he would eat that technique again and again.

When I was trouble about what to do, Keith, who came out of the ground, appealed to me.

"Pl-please Sensei! I beg of you, please don't teach Mother nasty techniques more than that!" (Keith)

He was already didn't care how desperate he was.

Well, I guessed no one would like if the types of techniques they would eat would increase, right? By the way, Keith called me Sensei because he lost a mock battle against me a couple of days ago. Beastkin tend to have such a tendency unless the opponent was clearly an enemy.

But, Isabella seemed to be looking forward to it. Besides...

"It's not only for you to eat that technique, right? Anyway, those techniques can't be used if you don't have gaps." (Sirius)

Since pro wrestling was often close to glamor techniques, it was also a technique that was supposed to be eaten by others.

I thought that he was getting a moderate tension feeling that he should never expose any openings, so I wanted to teach that rather as side training.

"Gu... guhaa! Aniki is right, Keith. In the first place, we are no good since we are eating the techniques." (Reus)

"You know that well, don't you? By the way, Reus. Which one do you think is better... Powerbomb or Giant Swing?" (Sirius)

"Since his balance is trained, Giant Swing is better... I think?" (Reus)

"..." (Isabella)

"Wh-what's with the dangerous-sounding name!? Mother also, your eyes are shining!" (Keith)

“If you don’t like it, I will not teach her if you give me a blow in the mock battle.” (Sirius)

“You-you sure!? Al-alright... next is...” (Keith)

After that... the Giant Swing technique was added to one of Isabella’s techniques.

Keith’s agony would probably continue until he looked at the long term benefits like Reus.



Then, Reese and Fia came here a bit later and joined us. After completing the morning training, it was time for breakfast.

Basically, it happened at different time, but it was becoming a daily routine for the Beast King’s family to have meals with us in the dining room.

“Onii-chan, today also, please.” (Mea)

“Got it. See this finger well.” (Sirius)

Mea arrived at the table and waited for breakfast to be prepared. As she sat next to me and pulled my sleeve, I slowly wiggled my finger while looking into Mea’s eyes.

“...This is alright for you to eat. From now on, if I clap my hand, that means Mea can already eat the meal without worry.” (Sirius)

Since the preparation of the meal was over by the time I clapped my hand as a signal, we started having breakfast.

Mea was poisoned one year ago and since the body unconsciously responded when eating meals after getting healed, it was impossible for her to eat food if Grethe didn’t called it first.

However...

“Mea-sama, are you alright?” (Grethe)

“I’m alright!” (Mea)

While Grethe was still worried, Mea reached out for the meal herself and brought it to her mouth.

Grethe exhaled as if she was relieved when Mea drank the soup without hesitation. She, then, stuck a big bread at Mea's small mouth while she was laughing.

"...That's great." (Grethe)

"Yeah, thanks to Onii-san's good luck charm." (Mea)

That good luck charm was... an implication.

In the first place, Mea's symptom was likely a mental illness, so I tried using implication as a treatment.

"You're going to eat after this without this good luck charm, right?" (Sirius)

"Y-yes. Can I eat this?" (Mea)

"It's alright. You can eat like this." (Sirius)

It was a secret to the person herself, but actually, it was no longer necessary to use the implication.

A full-scale implication was used for several times in the beginning. After that, the implication was undone and it was a matter of saying the appropriate words. It was like a so-called placebo effect.

When it was repeated several times and without using the implication at the same time... I thought that I could see some improvement.

The reason why she couldn't eat when there was no poison was she also had a feeling that it was alright not to be cured, but I certainly couldn't ignore the appearance that endured the stew that I showed her when we met for the first time.

This girl was still a child, so I would like her to have meals without hesitation.

Besides, there were many chefs who carefully handled the dishes that entered her mouth due to the past failures. Therefore, the possibility of poisoning was low.

Overly wary would make her tired. After all, moderation was the best.

“It is not that I don’t trust Sensei, but is it really safe?” (Keith)

“That is only restricted to the meals before me. There is less risk.” (Sirius)

When I suggested treatment with implication, the Beast King and Keith displayed approval, but Isabella didn’t object.

More importantly, Mea herself wanted to do the treatment when I told her. Since she cared about many people, she probably was thinking about doing it for long time.

When the father and the brother were told by their adored person, they had no choice but to accept it.

Of course, the only ones who knew the part of the implication were us and the Beast King family.

“I thought that it was a terrible means of manipulating not only Grethe but also my wife and subordinates, but I didn’t expect that there was also such a way of using it.” (Eisen)

“It is similar to weapons. Whatever it is, it depends on who uses it.” (Sirius)

“Hmm... you are right. Learn that well, Keith.” (Eisen)

“Yeah. However, I already don’t mind about such a way. Even so, in the end of the day, who is that Belford?” (Keith)

The identity of Belford who caused the confusion in this country and tried to kidnap Mea remained as a mystery.

Its real body was a manastone, and the person himself didn’t tell everything. It was meaningless to interrogate it since the body was different, and I regretted for unable to stop him completely.

However, by examining the place which seemed to be his laboratory, some information could be concluded to a certain extent.



The next day after the incident happened, together with the Beast King and Keith, I came in front of the hidden passageway that was found in McDatt's room which was on the first floor.

Since McDatt didn't remember the passageway that was found by the guard, it might have been made by Belford when he took over the body.

I told them not to enter the passageway because there were traps, but even if I didn't tell them, they might not want to enter because of an unpleasant atmosphere from the passageway that couldn't be determined where it came from.

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"Sirius-sama, he said that he felt something unpleasant from the interior." (Emilia)

"It is small, but there is a smell of blood." (Reus)

When the Beast King stood in front of the passageway that he could somehow managed to get it, Hokuto and the siblings raised vigilance.

From the smell of blood that Reus told, it looked like it wasn't going to be a fun place.

"Hmm... it is disturbing, but the dread is not worth considering. I'll go in first, you guys follow me." (Eisen)

"Please wait. It is dangerous, so let me check at least how far it stretches in." (Sirius)

It wasn't weird to install traps in the middle of this narrow passageway.

Besides, when I used [Search] aiming at the underground, the passageway didn't extend that way. It only descended a bit and then, it went straight ahead.

"In other words, the passageway is leading on the ground?" (Eisen)

"Yes, since he made a huge dragon, there must be a big entrance somewhere." (Sirius)

The Beast King was wondering. I guessed that it would be faster to explain while actually showing it.

We went outside the castle and headed for the direction in which the hidden passageway extended.

The hidden passageway was extending toward the vast forest spreading behind the castle.

While walking and occasionally confirming the position of hidden passageway with [Search] for a while, we kept going forward into the forest.

It was considerably troublesome, but it seemed to be worth it.

“...This is it.” (Sirius)

“What’s wrong? I wonder if this is a dead end.” (Fia)

“No... the passageway still continues, but I can feel any mana reaction here.” (Sirius)

He probably drew the magic formation of the wind to ventilate the passageway, but if that was the case, the reaction was too strong. The possibility of that magic formation to manipulate terrain by using explosion was high.

We would have been in a less favorable situation since we would be buried alive if we were on the underground passage and the magic formation was activated.

“It seems that Sirius-san’s cautiousness is over the top.” (Reese)

“If it becomes so, this place here is the halfway point. It will be a difficult position to go forward or backward.” (Sirius)

The monsters of the forest occasionally attacked us but since my companions were fighting them, I was merely concentrating on exploring.

Not just Reus and Keith, with the husband and wife here, they were all going all out. Hence, there was no need to turn back.

Hokuto was scratching the area around his neck with hind legs, maybe because he wasn’t too busy. By the way, it didn’t seem that it was due to itchiness. Apparently, he would do that because of the habit of the previous life.

Then, as we kept going further in the forest, we came out to a cliff where a big river

was flowing at the bottom of the valley.

It was a considerable deep valley but when we looked into it by changing the angle of view, we could see a cave on the walls of the cliff.

Half of the mountain could be seen from the castle and on top of that, the entrance of the cave was also hidden subtly with rocks covering it. Thus, the place couldn't be found unless people knew about it.

It would take over an hour to go here because of the forest and the topography, but it could be reached within tens of minutes if they went straight from the hidden passageway.

"Hmm, there was no cave in such a place." (Eisen)

"Me too... this is the first time I know it." (Isabella)

"Look, Oyajii. The entrance of the cave is big enough, so that monstrous dragon yesterday seemed able to go through it." (Keith)

"How do we get in, Aniki? Shall we ask Fia-ane?" (Reus)

"That's tedious... We should connect to it directly. Beast King-sama, would you give several manastones as a reward?" (Sirius)

"Hmm, got it. Don't hesitate to use it." (Eisen)

As I confirmed the hidden passageway which was in a relatively shallow position, I dig a hole to connect it to the hidden passage and I put the manastone drawn with [Create]. I had decided to enter the cave from there.

We kept moving forward while put up vigilance, but when we finally reached the destination... it displayed a terrible scene.

"What is this place!? What was he doing here?" (Eisen)

"Uh... my nose felt awry." (Isabella)

"The fact that there is no figure of people is at least a salvation..." (Sirius)

If it could be described in one word... that word would be madness.

Bloods that seemed to be from monsters were scattered around here and there in the large hall inside the cave. The rock surface was completely dyed in dark red maybe because it was repeatedly wet and dried on it.

In the corner of the hall, the cut monsters were gathered together, and there was also a big dragon's head and limbs there. Perhaps, it was a part not used for Dragloss since it has a familiar color and size.

It was clear that atrocious experiments were being conducted at this site. Anyway, I didn't plan to stay long here.

"Reese, you shouldn't look here. Please wait outside." (Fia)

"Ye-yes... I will do that." (Reese)

"Emilia, you too. Hokuto, please escort her." (Sirius)

"Please forgive me. I feel sick and the smell is so bad..." (Emilia)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

So, there were five people who looked inside and they were Reus, Fia, me, the Beast King and Keith.

Isabella seemed weak to such thing. She attached herself on Hokuto to stabilize the mind.

After that, we parted from the group who would remain on the ground. We, then, started searching for the hall filled with a thick smell of blood.

"There's nothing but dead bodies of monsters. Did you see something, Reus?" (Fia)

"Nothing is here. By the way, Fia-ane is fine with this, huh? My nose already reached the limit, you know." (Reus)

"I'm not really fine with it. It's just that I'm about tough in this matter. As soon as I find something, I will embrace Sirius. So, please be patient." (Fia)

“I accept that if it is serious, but if it’s a joke, I’ll pull your ears, alright?” (Sirius)

Since Reus had a tearful eyes while blocking his nose, when he thought about going up on the ground soon, Reus found a side passage in the place where it was invisible from Keith who was in the hall.

It was a small room and there was a desk made of rock shaved.

There was a book on the desk with the page opened. After confirming that there was no magical reaction, I took it in my hand.

“What is being written... is a magic formation. This page also... and this... almost all of them drawn with magic formations.” (Sirius)

“This is my first time seeing magic formations that complicated.” (Eisen)

“Me too. But... I have a feeling that I’ve seen it somewhere.” (Fia)

“I guess so. Perhaps, these are magic formations that were drawn on that Dragloss that he manipulated.” (Keith)

This book seemed to describe the progress of the experiment. Almost all pages were written with magic formations and the part about effect of the magic formation and the failure were barely written.

When I turned over the page and looked at the back of it, there were also a magic formation that seemed to have been drawn on the Chimera in Parade, its effects and the monsters used.

It was a strange matter that such a book was conveniently left, but he was happily talking about the experimental body when his true identity was discovered.

From that perspective, it was certain that he wanted to boast about it and I actually got a glimpse of his personality. So, it might not be strange to leave behind the record.

“The only things written are magic formations, is it? It would be better if there is a clue about Belford’s identity.” (Eisen)

“There’s none. Nevertheless, something like a report is... hmm?” (Sirius?)

Half of the book, which wasn't too old, was left blank. Only half of the book was written.

However, on the last page where it was written by hand, there was long sentences written with a magic formation which the structure was changed a little.

What was written there was...

'Succeeded in brainwashing low intelligence dragon species, but high intelligence is still impossible.'

'However, there are too few experimental body, since I can't carelessly turn them into enemies, let's halt this experiment at once.'

'There is no need to be impatient since I have gotten good result so far.'

'Next is the type of people.'

'Fortunately, I have secured experimental body that confused beastkins.'

'It has a special mana that can attract beastkin like a queen of bee monsters... it is really an interesting experimental body.'

'If I can use it well, I may be able to manipulate beastkin at will.'

'The preparation is going well.'

'I think that I will start the experiment that incite the beastkins in full scale soon.'

'There is not much time until the time of fusion. If I don't hurry... '

It seemed to be a paragraph written about interrupting ongoing experiments and switching to a new experiment.

Nevertheless, it seemed that Mea was in a rather dangerous situation.

If I let Belford escaped, he would draw the magic formation on this book soon and amplify Mea's ability. Was he planning to start experimenting on manipulating beastkin?

“Hmm... It’s great that my daughter is safe.” (Eisen)

“I’m glad that she is safe, but I am somehow don’t understand. At the very least, I wanted to crush the manastone with my hands.” (Reus)

“Is there anything else?” (Fia)

“...It’s hopeless. There is nothing other than the record of the experiment.” (Sirius)

After that, we continued searching the room and the cave, but the only good clue was this book.

Moreover, since it was just a book with the record of experiments, Belford’s identity remained unknown.

So, the ending for this book was...

“Beast King-sama, what do you want to do with that book?” (Sirius)

“Well, we only need to dispose it. It is better not to have such a dangerous thing around.” (Eisen)

“Are you sure? Although it is dangerous, if you can master this, your country will surely gain power, you know?” (Sirius)

“Hmm... I understand that power is dangerous. But using it means I tolerate the madness that has been done here. As a man, I don’t want to use it even a single one of it.” (Eisen)

“It is true that monster had extraordinary strength, but you know, it will be over if you depend on such strength.” (Keith)

“...Yeah. How about you, Sirius?” (Fia)

“I don’t need such a power. I have decided to do this.” (Sirius)

With this, if it was that good for nothing guy, he would experiment it for the sake of the country, but the Beast King understood that it would be dangerous if it was more than this.

Yes, such madness shouldn't be ignored.

I took out a homemade lighter, put the fire on the book and quickly disposed it.

I was considering fighting to the bitter end if the Beast King spared this power, but it was settled nicely with this.

After that, I completely filled the cave and the hidden passageways with manastone and all Belford's experiments were buried in the darkness.

The only thing left was a bitter experience that could be preparation for next time.



That was why Belford's identity remained a mystery, but the first clue was acquired.

"Hmm... Meal is the best while watching my daughter smile." (Eisen)

"Yup. With that smile, I can eat bread as much as I like." (Keith)

"...Yes." (Isabella)

While secretly letting out a sigh at the unchanging couple and brother, I was thinking about the lesson content of today.

I was currently teaching Mea as requested by Isabella.

Even so, I was like a temporary educator until McDatt recovered.

The matter with Belford had been resolved but I remained in this castle because of a new student.



Well, after breakfast, it would be Mea's lesson.

According to Belford's experiment record, the reaction of the beastkin to Mea was caused by the mana released from Mea.

For that reason, the first thing I thought her was a complete version of [Boost]. This

was to enable her control of mana in the body with her own will.

“...How is it?” (Mea)

“Yes, it’s going well. Just like the mana I poured a while ago, slowly put your mana on all over your body.” (Sirius)

“Yes, Sensei!” (Mea)

She usually called me Onii-san, but she called me Sensei only during class.

Nevertheless, Mea’s talent was quite considerable. There were still many useless parts, but she was already starting to circulate mana throughout the body. Was it due to the blood relation of the mother and father?

Subsequently, I was thinking of shifting to training that stopping mana overflowed from the body.

“Work hard, Mary-sama.” (Grethe)

“...Hang in there.” (Isabella)

“Yeah!” (Mea)

For some reason, Grethe and Isabella were cheering and rooting for Mea.

Moreover...

“Hey Mary, do your best. Father is always watching you!” (Eisen)

“You brother is also watching you!” (Keith)

There were a king and a prince who made a useless switch by looking into here from the gap of the door.

When I noticed it, the whole family were altogether, so this was no longer a class visit.

“...Those who are unrelated, please leave.” (Sirius)

“Let’s go, Keith! Now is the time to think how to prevent Isabella’s technique!” (Reus)

“This is more important, but... aah!” (Keith)

“He’s right, Beast King-sama! There are still plenty of political affairs!” (McDatt)

“Ju-just a little bit more! I will burn the scene of my daughter’s effort in my eyes firmly... aahh!” (Eisen)

The Beast King was pulled by McDatt who turned into a devil for work in order to clear everything while Keith was taken by Reus who came to invite for training. However, Grethe and Isabella showed a posture that they wouldn’t move at any cost. After reaching Mea, Isabella put her on the lap, and began stroking her daughter’s head with a relaxed expression.

I was judging whether this act of love was caused by Mea’s ability, but it seemed that it wasn’t that powerful as the feeling that I personally examined.

I wouldn’t know what was going to happen if she released mana with full power, but if she could live normally, it was good enough to relieve vigilance or raised interest at best.

Perhaps, it was a feeling of talking to a good people and avoiding bad people when walking alone in the town. Of course, that was limited to the beastkin.

It was a result of getting involved with the cute King’s daughter, but it was also due to that strange charisma.

In the case of the Beast King family, it was supplemented by the love toward the daughter.

“...Am I in the way?” (Isabella)

“There is no such a thing.” (Mea)

Mea, who was on Isabella’s lap, was laughing with joy.

Even the ill feeling that had been piling up since several days ago was completely disappeared. It made me nodded in satisfaction while smiling from the bottom of the heart.



Actually, I told Mea about her special ability on the other day.

Although it might be cruel to Mea who was still a child, there was a possibility that the whole country would move due to the carelessness or a single word uttered by her. If it was done poorly, she could become an existence called courtesan princess.

She knew the impact of her ability.

It was probably not the power that she wished for, but it was necessary for those who had the power.

The most difficult thing when telling this fact was that Mea might misunderstand that all the love she got was due to the ability.

Just as one thought, since Mea, who knew the fact, anxiously looked at their family, the Beast King and Keith desperately talked that there wasn't such a thing. However, whether Mea was somewhat confused, the anxiety appeared to be completely impossible to dispel.

At such a time, Isabella came close to Mea and lightly hit her daughter's cheeks with her hands in between.

{If it's due to the ability... I think that I will not hit Mary. But, I still hit you, right?}
(Isabella)

{Y-yes.} (Mea)

{And if I hit you... it mean you did something wrong. Our love... can't be exchanged with such ability.}" (Isabella)

{Okaa-san... } (Mea)

It was slight but that was the first time Mea got scolded by her mother. It seemed that she had calmed down after that.

And Mary, who was hugged by Isabella, was smiling while shedding tears.

This was also a bit of a stake. In other words, it was going to take some time for her to

understand, but if that was the situation, it was going to be fine.

After all, a mother was strong person.



I was relieved when looking at the intimate relationship between the mother and the daughter.

In this way, Mea wouldn't become someone with twisted personality if she was given a parental love.

There was also a possibility of becoming selfish, but that depend on the effort of the Beast King and others.

I was anxious when looking at such parents, but since they were adult enough, they probably had no problem to speak out.

Anyhow...

"I'm going to proceed to the next process soon, so Isabella-san, please stay away.

"..." (Isabella)

"No, don't rub your cheeks in silence. Please be patient for your daughter's sake."
(Sirius)

I wasn't sure which one of them was the spoiled one.

Although I didn't have problem to speak out, it was difficult for the daughter to tell that to the mother.

I somehow manage to persuade Isabella to head down to where Reus and Keith were training. Finally, Mea and I became alone again.

"Goodness... we're still in the class. Mea also need to solve the problem properly, you know." (Sirius)

"I'm sorry, Sensei. Since Okaa-san was caressing..." (Mea)

“Well, more importantly, you are in good term.” (Sirius)

“Ehehe, it’s like Sensei and Onee-chans. But sometimes, Otou-san and Okaa-san look more childish than me.” (Mea)

That happened many times, but it seemed that she was aware of the fact that their love were a bit excessive.

Mea was right. I didn’t know which one was the child, but I should firmly say the important things.

“Yes, I can understand your feeling. But you know, no matter how childish they looked like, everyone is more adult than Mea. So, when you have problem, don’t think only by yourself. Please properly consult with the people around you.” (Sirius)

There was no need to be impatient.

There were many people watching over her, so it was fine for her to grow up little by little.

“Now, the class will resume again. Next, try to make an image that cover the whole body so that it doesn’t leak out mana.” (Sirius)

“Yes!” (Mea)

The girl lively replied while smiling a dazzling smile like a sun.



That night... I visited McDatt’s room.

“Sirius-dono, do you have anything?” (McDatt)

“Yes, I want to talk a bit about Mary-sama...” (Sirius)

McDatt would return soon to be the educator for Mea eventually. I hoped that he guided Mea so that she wouldn’t stray in the wrong path.

Since he had various bitter experiences like this time, he would be able to point out in a different direction from her family.

First of all, I told him some worst possible possibilities and circumstances, and McDatt nodded while having a bitter smile.

“Surely... when considering that girl’s cuteness, those possibilities are likely to happen. I can’t forgive myself yet, but I will remember your words when I return to Mary-sama.” (McDatt)

Well, McDatt was adult enough, and I probably didn’t need to say too much.

The main issue at hand was this one. Next, I came to Grethe’s room.

“...What is it?” (Grethe)

“Grethe. I still haven’t punished you for aiming my life yet.” (Sirius)

“...Yeah. I will do anything if I can. Will it be fine... if I am the attendant for that person?” (Grethe)

“No, you are good enough. From now on, I’m going to give you an implication. Do not move from this place.” (Sirius)

“Eh?” (Grethe)

Ignoring the surprised Grethe, I turned my hand toward Grethe without giving her a chance to ask questions.

It was encountered with cold eyes, but this was important to her. I would tell her after confirming the bracelet that she still wearing.

“Grethe Ricole. Etch what I say from now on in your mind.” (Sirius)

“Eh? That is already...” (Grethe)

“If Mea doesn’t listen to the antagonism from the surrounding, and in the case if she is about to cause a war by emotion... I want you to stop her even if you have to risk your life. Even if... you have to kill Mea.” (Grethe)

“!?” (Grethe)

“...That’s it. Well, I can’t judge whether the implication is working or not because I’m

leaving soon. For the rest of this... it is all depend on you, Grethe.” (Sirius)

Although the word ‘Ricole’ was the activation key that made it easy to imply Grethe, the bracelet had already lost its function. There was no way for me to imply her.

This was a warning.

Even right now, I didn’t know how Mea would grow in the future.

If she lived together with Mea, she could think of such a worst assumption. It was heartless to do so, but it would be necessary for such existence in a big framework like a country.

I also didn’t know whether Grethe could do it, but as expected, I still couldn’t ignore that kind of troubles.

At the end of the day, it was just a possibility and I wasn’t serving this country anyway.

I still had a feeling that I got myself into this problem, but... well, I guessed it was alright.

I turned around without waiting for her reply, but my intention was probably got through.

While feeling that Grethe quietly lowered her head, I left that place.



Now... there was another thing to do before returning to my room.

‘If it’s too late, Emilia will look for me. So, let’s hurry a bit.’

After confirming that no one was following me, I went into the forest that was a little away from the castle and pierced Shishou’s wooden knife into the ground.

I also buried a manastone in the ground, and then, I broadly poured the content of a container that filled with tea.

{...That’s rude. Treat me a little more carefully.} (Shishou)

“I’m in a hurry. Leaving that aside, you may have heard about the situation, but... do you remember that Belford?” (Sirius)

{I don’t remember such a name.} (Shishou)

“It is about the manastone. It felt like it was similar to the situation of Shishou who made this knife.” (Sirius)

At the end of the experiment record, [Time of fusion] was written. It was like how Shishou was sharing knowledge through this knife, and... eventually, it would fuse with the holy tree.

Furthermore, not just implication, there was also about his knowledge and technique that was one step ahead.

So, it made me want to ask Shishou, but... was I thinking too much?

{However... when I was still an Elf, I remember having a strange person following me.} (Shishou)

“Oi, there was no way he detested because of that, right?” (Sirius)

{No... well, how should I say this? I feel like I was respected. In the beginning, I was only thinking about myself, so I didn’t talk to him most of the time. That’s why I don’t remember the name.} (Shishou)

That person respected Shishou... was it?

In that case, it wasn’t strange that he knew magic tools made by Shishou that were scattered all over the place. I could also assume that knowledge was passed through by collecting them.

If it resembled Shishou, there was a possibility that the main body was separated from Belford.

{I am somehow thinking what you are thinking now. The anticipation in time like this should be quite right. Although it is a conjecture, what would you do if I said if that was the guy?} (Shishou)

“Now? It seems impossible to look for it when there is no clue, but if I find it, I will

smash it with a reasonable extent.” (Sirius)

{That’s awful. Although the things left by me are likely to be abused, don’t you think that you should try to stop it as a disciple?} (Shishou)

“It’s about paying for own mistakes. Besides, Shishou also think the same, right?” (Sirius)

{Of course. It’s fine to live the way you like. Even if you have to carry too much on your own, there is nothing wrong with that, right... } (Shishou)

“...Yes, it is.” (Sirius)



After listening to words that seemed to be from Shishou, I went back to my room and...

“Aah... Sirius-sama. Welcome back.” (Emilia)

“Welcome back. Are you done already for today?” (Reese)

“Would you rather drink a bit? I got a wine that looks delicious from the kitchen earlier.” (Fia)

“Aniki! I can’t prevent Isabella’s techniques no matter what! Give me some advice!” (Reus)

“I heard from everyone that you can make tasty snacks like cake? I will pay you, so can you make it for me?” (Eisen)

“Hokuto-sama, please let me get on your back.” (Mea)

“Me too...” (Isabella)

“If my sister gets on, I will also–... guhaa!?” (Keith)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

In a situation that was noisier than usual, I had a bitter smile while remembering the sense of accomplishment.



Extra/Bonus

That day, I went to the castle's battleground in order to see Mea's ability whether she could use [Boost] even for a short time.

"Anyhow, I'm thinking that we should have a light match..." (Mea)

"Yes! I've made a solid preparation, so I won't counterattack you!" (Keith)

"No, it's troubling since you are my opponent..." (Mea)

The opponent of the match was Keith, and he was to be out-pushed with unusual enthusiasm.

Well, the person himself wanted to do it, so in order to see Mea's ability, I guessed he would be a sandbag, huh?

Incidentally, the Beast King also offered himself, but he was dragged away by McDatt and had disappeared. On the other hand, Isabella declined maybe because she wasn't confident in adjusting her strength.

"Come on! Show me your power to Onii-san!" (Keith)

"Yeah... I'm going!" (Mea)

Mea slowly approached her brother who was waiting while spreading both his hands, and...

"Ei!" (Mea)

"Guhaaaa!" (Keith)

It was a Backdrop.

Although she was strengthened with [Boost], she was quite strong to life up Keith whose physical difference was nearly twice her own.

Nevertheless, it was a truly magnificent form.

Perhaps, she mimicked by seeing Isabella's appearance.

"How is it, Okaa-san?" (Mea)

"...Splendid." (Isabella)

Mea was raised high by Isabella, and they were happily spinning around like a mother and a daughter.

By the way, Keith was thrown down without preparing any defensive posture? Was he alright?

"He... hehe... my sister is not only growing, she also embraces me. What a reward..."
(Keith)

I wondered if this brother could get married in the future... seriously.

Intermission

The Path of the Old Man

“Hmm... it’s been a while to be here too.” (Lior)

I swung sword while traveling.

I did so while slashing the monsters and bandits.

While swinging the sword, I pursued Sirius and Emilia, and the fighting festival that held every year was at... Ga–... Ga...

“Kid. What is the name of this town?” (Lior)

“...It’s Garaff. Although you have won many times at the Fighting Festival, you still don’t remember the name of the town?” (Beowulf)

“The only thing I remember is the arena where I can fight.” (Lior)

“You don’t even feel bothered when answering that with full of confident...” (Beowulf)

In any case, I arrived at Garaff.

Yup, I remembered many things as I was informed by the kid.

I participated in the fighting festival and repeatedly gained victory, but in the end, there was no opponent who could oppose me. Then, it became a bother to participate.

Like always, the town seemed to be full of vibrant with many adventurers carrying various weapons, but as expected, no one gained my interest.

Was there anyone who overflowed with enthusiasm going to fight me...

“Hmm... what’s going on? Why everyone is looking away when I looked at them?” (Lior)

“If you are looking at them with such glaring eyes, they will definitely run away, you know.” (Beowulf)

“That’s bad. As an adventurer, I want them to show determination of suddenly slashing me.” (Lior)

“It would be strange to pull out weapons suddenly. Tousen-san also shouldn’t pull out weapons, alright?” (Beowulf)

“Don’t worry about that, kid. As long as the opponents never pull out weapons, I won’t do it.” (Lior)

The kid who walked behind me was definitely Beowulf... wasn’t it?

By the way, this kid was the son of the Sword Saint who I once fought.

The famous Sword Saint died because of illness, but he fought me with the intention to kill until the end. Publicly, I would end him as a swordsman.

And this kid was looking out for me to listen to end of that Sword Saint.

At first, I had no doubt that it was for revenge, but when I told him about the end of his father, the kid didn’t only hate me, he also thanked me.

{Thank you so much... for letting Tou-san to remain as swordsman until the end.}
(Beowulf)

The battle of swordsman was always a matter of life.

It would be different if the opponent was ordinary people or common adventurers, but as a fellow swordsman, we were fighting by betting our life.

So, the boy, who thanked me, seemed to have various prospects for the future.

Actually, there might be a possibility of surprise attack when seeing an opening, but if he did that, I would say he was welcomed to do so. If it was so, I would just kill him.

I intended to be apart from him after the talk ended, but since the boy seemed to be a disciple of Sirius, I let the kid accompanied me since I was chasing him.

Since I was chasing while training, I told him that my travel would be delayed if we went together. However, he said that he wanted to learn a lot, and he began to come along on his own.

Well, since he was doing troublesome things like preparing meals, he was really helpful if I had to be honest.

“Well, I guess I should look for someone who looks strong at the stadium.” (Lior)

“Shall we go to book the accommodation first since you can do that later? No, before that, we should go to the adventurer’s guild and bring those monsters material.” (Beowulf)

“It’s a bother...” (Lior)

“Let alone the inn, we don’t have enough to cover the meals. Maybe, there are strong people in the guild, you know?” (Beowulf)

“That’s so.” (Lior)

Since I forgot the way there, I let the kid guided me to there. When I entered the building of the adventurer’s guild... suddenly, a screaming voice hit me.

“Tousen-sama!? You also come to this town!” (??)

The Jou-chan, who confirmed my presence, was screaming while sitting at the receptions. She looked delighted.

“That Jou-chan is surely... were you the beauty who did the live report of the Fighting Festival?” (Lior)

“Yes, but it is unusual for Tousen-san to remember someone. It is because she is beautiful, right?” (Beowulf)

“Every time I won the Fighting Festival, she said something like wanting to marry me, or attacking me not just in the inn, but also in the bed. I can remember it even when I don’t like it.” (Lior)

“You said that you were attacked before... Anyway, it doesn’t sound good memories with that lady, isn’t it?” (Beowulf)

“She’s simply a hassle.” (Lior)

She might be a woman who liked a man, but she was persistent even though I told her that I wasn’t interested at all. I was also having hard time to chase her away every time.

When that Jou-chan walked from the reception seat, the kid went behind me and hid. It seemed that Jou-chan was no good as I said, but to make me as a shield... he got some nerve, huh.

“I’m honored to see you again! But, the Fighting Festival has already ended...”
(Receptionist/Announcer)

“I know. I came here today to sell monster materials only. Come, do it quickly.” (Lior)

“Understood. Eh, ooh!? Is that you, Beowulf-sama!? Perhaps, you are Tousen-sama’s disciple-...” (Receptionist)

“You’re wrong! We’re together due to circumstances. More importantly, here’s my materials...” (Beowulf)

Jou-chan was noisy as usual.

The surrounding adventurers were starting to make noises when they noticed me, but they were only looking without doing anything.

An adventurer who seemed to be aiming for Jou-chan was glaring at me, but he looked away in a hurry when our eyes met.

‘Seriously... do you think you can get a girl with such guts, what a fool!’

While looking around in such a way, Jou-chan was unusually surprised when she was showed the materials from the kid.

“Th-this is... could it be... from the horn of the dragons that live deep in the mountains? In addition to that, you have it a lot...” (Receptionist)

There was a highway that we greatly detoured a steep mountain on the way to this town. However, we went straight ahead since it was troublesome, we found the horns of the monsters.

I fought them too. As for its meat, it was tasty since it was quite chewy. I stayed on the mountains for a while and hunted dozens of them.

The kid was surrounded by monsters and he probably would die several times, but it was good experience.

“Uhhh, it’s a side trip...” (Beowulf)

“That place is one of the most dangerous zones, and I think that it is not a place to go for a side trip. Please wait for a while.” (Receptionist)

Since the materials were reek of blood, we could send it from our private room, but the kid was directly sending it here because it was rare horns.

After depositing the materials, we waited for a while. Then, Jou-chan came back before me with a slightly tense look.

“Tousen-sama. I’m sorry, but the guild leader would like to see you...” (Receptionist)

“About what? If he wants to talk to me, he should come here.” (Lior)

“Don’t say that it is troublesome to do so...” (Beowulf)

“...I thought you would say so, so I came here.” (Guildmaster)

“Guild Leader!?” (Receptionist)

“So... Will you listen?” (Guildmaster)

“Hmm... it can’t be helped then.” (Lior)

I planned to look for a strong guy at the stadium after this, but if he came by himself, there was no way to ignore him.

While sighing, I followed the guildmaster, a bald old man.



“What kind of business you have with me?” (Lior)

“Don’t be impatient. After all, it takes times to assess the horns you’ve brought anyway. Look, I have prepared light meal and sweets, you can have it.” (Guildmaster)

“Hmm... more!” (Lior)

“You’re eating a lot as usual, huh? Oi, bring some more.” (Guildmaster)

“Understood! Tousen-sama, I’ll prepare immediately.” (Receptionist)

‘If I’m not mistaken, this baldy name is Badom.’

His age was close to mine. Since we were facing each other each time I won the Fighting Festival, I could openly speak with this guy.

Anyhow, the kid and I were brought inside of the building and into Badom’s room, that baldy, but why was Jou-chan following us?

“Kid. If you are not eating this, I’m going to eat all of them, you know?” (Lior)

“...Please don’t worry about me. I’m envious since you don’t mind about the surrounding even at such times.” (Beowulf)

“Well, this Jii-san is out of norm in many ways. Even so, you were also stood out in the Fighting Festival...” (Badom)

“We are travelling together because our purpose is similar. Traveling together... only... uhh...” (Beowulf)

‘Hmm... is he at it again?’

“Oi, are you alright? It feels like you are dead inside... were you having bad time?” (Badom)

“Of course! That is a result of charging while laughing no matter how many monsters that were many times bigger than people and went to smash thief’s hideout because he was in the mood of walking, I was left in a group of monsters and could die several

times. And trying to kill each other in the mock battles during spare times... arrrgghhh..." (Beowulf)

"Hey, get a hold of yourself!" (Lior)

"Haa-!?" (Beowulf)

When I beat his back, the kid regained his mind while lightly coughed.

That condition had decreased these days, but it would take some time to get used to my behavior.

"Aah... I'm sorry. I lose myself again." (Beowulf)

"...You seem to be struggling." (Badom)

"Yes. Although I am just travelling together, I think that I become strong in various ways in this short period of time. Especially, on the mentality part..." (Beowulf)

"I guess so. You can also go easy on him, you know." (Badom)

"I am just moving in my usual stuff." (Lior)

There was no problem since the kid didn't die.

In the first place, other than reuniting with Sirius, he followed me because he wanted to know my strength.

"There's nothing wrong to act the way I like, right?"

"Leaving that aside, why are you calling me for? If it's about chitchatting, you might as well prepare as many strong people as you can." (Lior)

"Aah, sorry. Actually, I would like you to appear in the match that being held in the arena today." (Badom)

"Hmm... that's so sudden, isn't it? I don't mind doing that, but I thought the Fighting Festival has already over?" (Lior)

"It's not about the Fighting Festival. There are a lot of matches at the arena..." (Badom)

Apparently, there were matches between five-man parties in the arena right now.

The matched had begun yesterday and it seemed that the champion would be decided today...

"I would like you to fight with that champion." (Badom)

"Ooh? Are they strong bunch?" (Lior)

"Well... they are. Individually, they are at intermediate adventurer level, but they are close to advanced adventurer level when they are in a party." (Badom)

"In order words, Tousen-san appearance is like a side show?" (Beowulf)

"Officially, yes, that's the purpose. But, there is other purpose. Their personalities are a bit..." (Badom)

It seemed that they were a party who fought with magic alone without using any weapons, and it wasn't well received by the surroundings.

"They are bunch who highly regard magic and look down on swordsman and people who use weapons. I admit that magic is powerful, but it's troubling if that impression spread to the surrounding." (Badom)

"The main idea of the arena is about clashing of weapons, in short, the balance is important... is that it?" (Beowulf)

Apparently, it had happened for two days. In the game of yesterday, the people with weapons were told that they would only be walls of meats.

Hmm... if those bunch did such a thing, they probably had considerable abilities. This made me interested for a bit.

"That's it. It's going to be troublesome if fewer adventurers use weapons in the arena, thinking that magic is the only a better choice. In order to let these greenhorns who have such a biased thought to realize the reality a bit, I was hoping to hire an advanced adventurers party to fight them, but... unfortunately I got no one." (Badom)

"So, am I going to do that?" (Lior)

“That’s right. I would like you to whip the nature of these people who make light of people who fight at the front line. Actually, it is also fine if I do this, but it’s troubling in various ways because of my position...” (Badom)

“If Tousen-san goes out there, I don’t think it will end with just whipping...” (Beowulf)

“There are other reasons, but this Jii-san is the best for that. You can do as you like as long as you don’t kill them. How’s that?” (Badom)

“Hmm... fine. I will accept it.” (Lior)

“You do?” (Badom)

“I fight monsters only these days. So, I want to fight those who use magic. Well, it’s a bit of training.” (Lior)

Hopefully they weren’t far behind that angry Elf because I would like to recall the filling of slashing magic soon.

“Thanks. “Since this is a personal request, I will give you several gold coins as a reward–...” (Badom)

“How about a marriage with me!?” (Receptionist)

“Don’t need it!” (Lior)

Jou-chan, who was bringing the sweets, suddenly interrupted, but yeah, I wasn’t interested!



{I think that you will be in time for the final match if you go to the arena now. Why don’t you look at how they fight? I will also go there after this.} (Badom)

After getting out of the guild, the kid and I came to the arena.

It looked like the matches were still going on from the sound of cheering, but I was wondering when I arrived in front of the entrance of the arena.

“Hmm... what is this?” (Lior)

There was a stone statue of a wolf at the entrance as if to protect the arena.

It wasn't here in the past. Since it was a stone statue with a strange presence, it unintentionally made me stopped my feet.

Jou-chan who accompanied me explained because I was wondering, but... was that the job of a receptionist?

"This is the Beast Companion who was accompanied the previous champion. It was built by the donation of the committed beastkin, and it has become the image which is also said to be the guarding of the arena now." (Receptionist)

"I explained before, right? This is the wolf brought by Sirius-san and his name is Hokuto. He is a sacred wolf called the messenger of the God. He seems to be a Hundred Wolves." (Beowulf)

"Ooh... this is a Hundred Wolves, is it? It looks quite powerful." (Lior)

"It was made with regard to his actual size. I want to be more intimate with the participant Sirius for having such a wonderful wolf..." (Receptionist)

"The Hundred Wolves is much stronger that Tousen-san think. Reus seemed to train with the Hundred Wolves from time to time, but I heard that he still couldn't land a blow." (Beowulf)

"Hohou! That's a worthy opponent!" (Lior)

It would be a pleasure to see Sirius again.

While looking forward to the future, when I was about to enter the arena, I noticed another large stone statue at an open space a bit away from the entrance.

"What is that stone statue? It has a big sword, and I feel like it resembles someone..." (Lior)

"It does not only resemble someone. It is the stone statue of you." (Beowulf)

"That's right! Did I explain that the stone statue was built because Tousen-sama won the Fighting Festival for three times!?" (Receptionist)

“Is that so?” (Lior)

Did I win for the third times?

I certainly fought here, but even if I was asked, I remembered how to answer this properly.

‘I see. This is me, is it?’

I felt something wrong after seeing this... was it something like that?

“...That is a fake.” (Lior)

“Uhhh... Tousen-san? What are you trying to do with that sword?” (Beowulf)

“Pl-please stop it! It is a stone statue that the craftsman poured the most effort!”
(Receptionist)

“Nuh!? What to do!?” (Lior)

I was only thinking to give a slight cutting because the shape of the sword was different.

Since I was pushed down by those two, I was forced to stop.

“Ehehe... what a strong muscle...” (Receptionist)

Jou-chan didn’t seem wanting to stop...



As we enter the arena, we came to special seating where we could watch the game without worrying about the surroundings. It was isolated from seating for general audience.

People wouldn’t be able to use this area unless they paid a lot of money or high ranking people, but Jou-chan negotiated saying that this was only temporary, so we were allowed to use it.

Whether I was lucky or not, the final match was about to begin.

“Hou... it certainly a place where you can see well.” (Lior)

“Hehehe, I get to do a lot of faces when doing live coverage.” (Receptionist)

“It helps. Please look. Is that the party that the guildmaster said back then?” (Beowulf)

As the kid pointed, there were five people who didn't hold any weapons in the ring.

They seemed young, maybe somewhat older than the kid?

The match started when I thought so, and the other party who held various weapons was running at once.

If people knew that the opponent used magic, the basic tactic was to crush them before they threw spells. However, that choice was wrong.

But...

“...It was a beautiful coordination. They are good at fighting.” (Beowulf)

“Yes.” (Lior)

I felt sorry that the match had ended in a blink of an eye.

Three people released countless beginner magic while making earth walls to stop the other party. The remaining two used wide range intermediate and advanced magic and wiped them out.

Although the other party wasn't weak, everyone who used magic has their own capabilities and they accurately coordinated and moved with each other.

The baldy was right, they were certainly strong...

“Well, it will be the end if you hit the opponents who lightly surpass beginner magic.” (Lior)

“Yeah. It seems that there are no outstanding people who got through this time.” (Beowulf)

“Since the match is not big, it only gathers intermediate adventurers.” (Receptionist)

If there was a vanguard with a weapon and a shield in hands, it would be more balanced, but... that seemed impossible.

Those five people were wearing light equipment as much as to say that they would use nothing but magic. Although i couldn't see well what was hidden in the robes and clothes, I understood that their bodies would break apart even if I gently pushed them. I wanted to tell them to train their bodies or swinging swords more.

Even that stupid Elf mage also trained his bodies in case of someone coming close, you know?

{There are no enemies in front of our magic! No matter how good their weapons and skills are, it is useless if they can't come closer!} (??)

The brat who seemed to be the leader declared that while expressly boasted own magic.

{That's why it is useless to have weapons! People have magic! Those warriors with weapons are nothing but meat walls in front of magic!} (??)

'Hmm... he is certainly an extreme guy.'

This was rather my intuition, but that brat seemed to hate those with weapons. I wanted to say to that the baldy that he was troublesome guy.

Nevertheless... I felt an unusual incongruity from that leader-like brat.

'It feels like I have met him somewhere... uh, that's not good. I can't remember.'

"I don't mean to deny everything he says, but that is a bit overstatement." (Beowulf)

"I think so too! Besides, the battles in the arena will be more glorious with something like the colliding between powers with full strength! I don't want to admit such a one-sided magical battle!" (Receptionist)

"They are drowning in their power, as I did before. Tousen-san. Together with me, let's show them the real swordsman." (Beowulf)

"What are you saying? I don't need you, kid, for these brats. Just stay silent." (Lior)

“Eh?” (Beowulf)

“No way... are you going to participate? If it so, please leave it to me!” (Receptionist)

“Eh, both of you, wait a sec? I have somewhat bad feelings, what are you going to—... someone, stop these two!” (Beowulf)

Ignoring the restraint of the kid, Jou-chan went to the live coverage seat and I leaped from the crowd and landed on the edge of the ring.

The audience was confused with my sudden appearance, but a cheering sounded in the arena once I pulled out my sword. Apparently, they realized who I was.

Then, the brats who stood on the ring were a bit confused by the situation where the audience was making noises.

“-!? That old man is...” (??)

“Oi, what’s going on? Didn’t they win already!?” (??)

“Someone, please chase that old man immediately!” (??)

“Hmm, it’s fine to force me out. Are you brats going to do it with magic?” (Lior)

As I walked down toward the ring and pointed my sword while provoking them, the brats glared at me which I could easily understand its meaning.

While a man, who seemed to be the referee, was wondering what to do, he looked at Jou-chan, who was sitting on the live coverage seat and she seemed to be telling something to the surrounding.

{Ladies and gentleman. The winner of this tournament was the party [Fangs of Flame] led by Asyl, but here’s a new information for you. It is... Participant Ikki Tousen, who had won the Fighting Festival for three times in the past, and he came here! Moreover... he wants to challenge them alone!} (Receptionist)

Yeah, the moment Jou-chan informed this through magic, the cheers became bigger and the audience started to get excited. I came here because some people prefer flashy things, so I accepted it as if it was a sudden situation.

{But since the victory has already been decided, the result will not change even if everyone from [Fangs of Flame] fights Participant Tousen. Of course, you may refuse, but... } (Receptionist)

“If you win, I’ll give you fifty gold coins!” (Lior)

{Oooh! Participant Tousen has made a big appearance! If he loses, he will fork out the money himself! Now, what is your answer, [Fangs of Flame]?} (Receptionist)

“We don’t have such money!” (Beowulf)

I felt like I heard the voice of the kid, but it was drowned out by cheers. In other words, I couldn’t hear anything!

It might be aggressive, but they seemed hesitated because of the money.

The audience was also expected, and since they were boasting so much, they weren’t planning to run away, right?

“...That’s fine. But, is that Jii-san really going to fight alone?” (Asyl)

“Yes, I said so. You are not hesitating because of an old man with a big sword, right?” (Lior)

“Cheh, don’t regret it! Out of those with weapons... I really hate the ones with a big sword!” (Asyl)

“It seems that it has been decided! Although Participant Tousen displays unrivaled strength when fighting by individuals, how would he go through the coordination of magic that the [Fangs of Flame] unleash? Ladies and gentlemen, you must watch this!” (Receptionist)

Hmm, with this, everything seemed to be ready.

According to the original plan, I would provoke them while the baldy performed the award ceremony. It should be the flow to make me enter the stage at the same time with the permission, but... there was no problem since I could fight anyway.

Before I knew, there was the baldy next to Jou-chan. I guessed that it was alright since he was having a bitter smile.

{Since the permission from the top has been given, I would like to start the match! Participants, are you ready?} (Receptionist)

“I am alright anytime, but how’s their mana? If it’s not enough, they might need a break, you know?” (Lior)

“Don’t look down on us! Do you think our mana has depleted with a little use of beginner and intermediate magic? We also can do this anytime!” (Asyl)

{Well then... the match starts now!} (Receptionist)

After the brats and I took a certain distance, the match began with the declaration of Jou-chan.

At the same time as the match started, three of them released countless beginner magic while the other two performed long chanting magic, but... I didn’t move even a step from the spot.

{What’s going on? Participant Tousen is not moving at all! What is he going to do if he is not going to approach the opponents?} (Receptionist)

“I don’t know how strong this Jii-san is, but don’t you dare to think you can do anything with a single sword in front of our magic!” (Asyl)

“Second, Third, aim and do sequential firing! First, target the moment he evades!” (Asyl)

The twenty beginner magic invoked by the three were lumps of rocks and flames.

In the previous match, they continuously released such beginner magic and skillfully stopped enemies’ movements.

All that magic were hurled towards me, but...

“Nuoooo!” (Lior)

I knocked them all.

It would be different if the magic were all hurled at the same time, but it wasn’t difficult if it launched in order.

I just needed to swiftly swing my sword according to the flying magic.

“Wha? He got... hit, right?” (??)

“Do-don’t be afraid! Of course, beginner magic is to confine him. Keep doing that to stop him from approaching!” (Asyl)

Hmm... as expected, even though it was magic, it was different.

The magic unleashed by that Elf gave a strange response, but the feeling I got from these brats was like cutting an air.

Was it because the different in concentration of magic? Well, it was pitiful to compare them to him who lived a long life.

Then, when the slashed magic exceeded thirty, the remaining two people had finished chanting the intermediate magic that they were about to release.

“Granting chains of confinement to offender! [Earthbound]” (??)

“Manifest from the ground and penetrates with spears of rocks! [Earth Javelin]” (??)

Ooh... since I was alone, they were not using wide range magic, but using a restraint magic, huh?

When I sliced the last beginner magic hurled, my body was tied up by countless chains of rocks that grew from the feet.

At the same time, spears of rocks that seemed to easily penetrate my stomach also flew away.

Since I would die if I got hit by that magic, the Jou-chan and the audiences were making noise, but this was a battle with such a tense feeling. They weren’t making noises one after another.

Besides...

“That’s not good enough to take my life!” (Lior)

I pulled out the chains wrapped around my body by force, and I sliced the incoming

spears of rocks.

Since the assault from the brats stopped maybe because they were agitated, I made a step forward in the meantime.

“Next!” (Lior)

“Eh... wha?” (??)

“Didn’t you say you are going to release next magic quickly? You were so confident with your magic, so are you saying that was the end?” (Lior)

The inside of the ring became quiet for a moment due to my declaration. The kid and the baldy seemed to sigh in amazement as if they were thinking that I came here to practice slicing magic.

I certainly came here because of that baldy request, but the main focus was those brats.

“I will not come out unless you brats unleash magic. Either wide range magic, or whatever it is, use it without hesitation!” (Lior)

“...What are we going to do?” (??)

“He is surely not moving, but...” (??)

The brats looked confused, but they finally started chanting when they noticed that I wasn’t moving as I said earlier. When I looked at the baldy, he seemed to give instructions to prevent the audience from being hurt, so I didn’t need to worry about outside.

Well, this time, I wanted them to unleash advanced magic.

“Old man! That leeway is fatal!” (??)

“If you think you can slice wide range magic, try to do it!” (??)

“It has been decided that magic is stronger!” (??)

Then, wide range magic and advanced magic were unleashed one after another from

the brats who finished casting.

The floor stone of the ring jumped out at the same time to the left and right, and the advanced Earth magic that tried to crush me while I was standing in the middle, was cut with a round sword swing at that spot. The intermediate Wind magic, that blew blades of wind in wide range, was blown away with the wind pressure caused by the sword swing.

I was also hurled by an advanced magic that creates a large fireball that covered me completely, but from my point of view, it was just a big flame. It would be easy to slice it if I swung the sword with a little effort.

While continued slashing various magic like that, I surely approached the brats a step at a time. I was like a wall that was getting closer to them...

I forgot how many steps I took, but by the time I stood before the brats, everyone except the leader was fainted due to mana exhaustion.

It seemed that the leader held his knees due to the same reason, but he somehow managed to keep his consciousness.

‘What a splendid determination.’

“Is it over?” (Lior)

“Haa... haa... don’t... look... down... on... me! I... still...” (Asyl)

‘...That’s weird.’

It felt like I was bullying someone weaker...

“...Fine.” (Lior)

Whether it was a match without killing, a battle was a battle.

I was considering whether I should knocked without killing him if he did something like escaping from the ring or giving up at the pressed moment, but I’d just praised his guts until he collapsed because of mana exhaustion.

Anyhow, they should understand now that magic wasn’t everything.

When I lightly pushed his head thinking about making him faint, that brat was looking at me, and I finally realized the reason of this uncomfortable feeling.

“Hmm... are you from Krupps household?” (Lior)

“...Did you finally remember?” (Asyl)

“It can’t be helped because you’re not alone. So, are you the same with that fool? Has he grown up from being childish?” (Lior)

“I am his younger brother! My brother died because of illness as well as a grudge against you!” (Asyl)

I wasn’t good at remembering things other than those I was interested in, but I remembered well about the Krupps household.

Although he wasn’t interested in swords, he was one of the noble who became my disciples solely because of prestige, and he killed the disciples I raised and gathered because of jealousy.

He was a nobleman with a considerable status in a country, but it wasn’t enough after slicing one of his arms and threw him at the king.

Nevertheless... that fool had passed away, huh?

So... that was the reason... why this brat hated those who used swords.

“Strongest Sword, Lior! You didn’t only sliced my brother’s arm, you also made our household fell because your advice to the king! I will never forgive you!” (Asyl)

“What are you talking about? That fool killed my disciples, after all.” (Lior)

“That’s because while you made him as your disciple, you disrespect my Krupps household!” (Asyl)

“Too noisy. In spite of his manner, I can’t favor him because of the way he boasted strength. While he degenerated until the adventurer, he still didn’t understand. That’s why!” (Lior)

That fool was completely thought nothing but himself. There was no mistake as they

both were blood related.

It didn't matter whether he was the heir of the household, but even if I didn't take any part in this, his household would fall under him.

When I sliced that fool, I felt emptiness more than anger...

"I am grateful even though it is only a bit. Thanks to that, I am living a life better than before." (Lior)

"Are you kidding me!? While making our household fall, you dare to..." (Asyl)

"This is no longer a dialogue, and it is troublesome. Come anytime if you want to get revenge. I will accept it anytime." (Lior)

When I raised my sword while firing bloodlust, the brat fell on his butt and looked up at me in fear.

That frightened eyes were similar to that fool, but there was no need to worry.

"There is no next time, remember? I will not kill you in this match now, but next time, I will cut you into half." (Lior)

The sword swung down stopped just before touching the head of the brat.

By the way, this technique of stopping just before was a technique I learned when fighting several times against that kid.

Dust and pebbles in the arena fiercely fluttered by the wind pressure of the sword swung down, but that brat was in safe condition. There was a little blood flowing from his forehead... but it was alright!

"Hmmm. I became better at watering down my strength." (Lior)

"I wonder what it is like at the time when the blood is coming out..." (Beowulf)

I ignored the slight murmured of the kid and when I took the live coverage seat, Jou-chan was nodding with shining eyes.

{It's already decided! It is an overwhelming victory! As expected of the Fighting

Festival champion, there's no problem no matter how many opponents he has!} (Receptionist)

The match ended by Jou-chan's declaration. About half of the audiences were pleased while I felt that the rest were confused. There were among them who looking satisfied on how the pride of these brats was broken.

Anyhow, I was only walking while slashing magic. Maybe it was unsatisfactory for audiences who like the collisions between weapons.

{But, the [Fangs of Flame] fought impressively. Not only the strength but also abundant magic, did they show various possibilities?} (Receptionist)

{That's right. This time, it was decided by Participant Tousen who uses sword, but that is the strength for someone like that. Since both weapons and magic change according to circumstances, I want you all to understand that none is better than other.} (Badom)

Jou-chan praised the brats who fought well even though they lost, and the baldy used magical tools to join the live coverage.

As the kid said, they kept on talking for a long time to find the balance or something, but in the meantime, I quickly went away from the match ring.

{Eh... wait a sec! Interview... you can answer it in a hot night with me... Participant Tousen!} (Receptionist)

I was already satisfied with slashing magic, anything more than that was troublesome.



"Ojii-chan, you are using same sword as Reus-oniisan, isn't it?" (Kathia)

"Hahaha! He is not my disciple, but I taught that kid swords. I want more!" (Lior)

"I will prepare it immediately. Even so, it's been a while to have people to eat this much. Kathia, please help with Tousen-san a bit." (Cecil)

"Leave it to me!" (Kathia)

After entrusting the cleaning up and leaving the arena, I was joined by the kid who

chased while sighting. Then, I stayed in a lodging recommended by him.

It seemed that this was the lodging which was in the middle of the town where those guys stayed when they were here.

There was another thing that I was happy at.

“As I expected, that guy left his recipes even here. I wish I could eat it here.” (Lior)

“Deep fried chicken is delicious!” (Kathia)

“Hmmm. It has a unique flavor but it’s also good. Thanks to the kid who choose this lodging!” (Lior)

“...If it so, don’t eat my portions.” (Beowulf)

“That’s because you don’t eat it fast!” (Lior)

Sliced before being sliced.

Eat before being eaten... it should be the same as the sword.

While leaving the kid who had a bitter smile, I took the cup that was poured with sake.

“Uhhh... that is strong sake, is it alright for you to drink it in one go?” (Kathia)

“It is something that I usually drink like water. This much is fine.” (Lior)

“That’s amazing. You are the second person who can drink all at once, you know?” (Kathia)

“Ooh, who is the other guy?” (Lior)

“Yes. The Elf-oneechan who was together with Reus-oniichan.” (Kathia)

There were many strong drinkers in this town where adventurers gathered.

Besides, the daughter of a couple who operated this lodging could do it without being afraid of me. So, I kept on drinking in a good mood.

“Uhh... Is Tousen-sama likes children? Young people is...” (Receptionist)

“Nope! By the way, why Jou-chan is here?” (Lior)

“Oh you! I came to accompany Tousen-sama in your room!” (Receptionist)

“Eei, can you go away! I told you I don’t need it!” (Lior)

“Ah, I will not give up! I will nooottttt!” (Receptionist)

I was trying to shake off Jou-chan who was holding my arm, but she was quite tenacious.

Where in this thin arm got this kind of power. She was only a receptionist of a guild where ruffians gathered.

“Oh, calm down, Tousen-san. Look, here’s another one.” (Kathia)

“It can’t be helped. I’m eating it.” (Lior)

Although she wasn’t as much as Emilia, this girl was also a straightforward and cute girl.

Even so... I wondered what Emilia was doing this time.

I guessed that it was fine for him to win against e, but if he made Emilia cry... I would slice him.

Even if it was difficult to slice him when he became her partner... I should work harder.

“As expected, you like children...” (Receptionist)

“Nope!” (Lior)

“Well, I’m just joking, you know!? But, the strength of this arm—... ouch ouch! The content is coming out!” (Receptionist)

“Don’t worry. Before the contents come out, your life will end.” (Lior)

“Gu... uhh! I lost... nope!” (Beowulf)

“Ooh?” (Lior)

The kid grabbed my arm, but whether he tried to get away by force, he jumped out of the window and prepared his sword.

Although I didn’t use full power, did he slip away my restraint by sheer force?

‘You are indeed good.’

“Hahaha! That’s the spirit! How about training after meal?” (Lior)

“If you are drunk now... I should be able to win!” (Beowulf)

“Do you think you can land a single blow on me!?” (Lior)

“Aah... that confidence is great, Tousen-sama!” (Receptionist)

And then, our usual battle had began.

It was true that I was a bit drunk, but if I pull out the fighting spirit, the drunkenness would go away.

Well, while on the way...

“Didn’t I say... like always!” (Beowulf)

“Got you!” (Lior)

“Die! You dirty old man!” (Beowulf)

“Don’t get in the way!” (Lior)

“““Gyaaahhh-!?” (??)

The brats who had launched magic behind me, were blown away by my [Break Thrust] together with their magic.

I didn’t know who were they, but it didn’t matter who attacked first.



As a result... the town was damage a bit by the battle, a part of the commission reward had been deducted.

Damn it, even though the fight was started by the kid...

"I can't understand!" (Lior)

"I am also more or less are paying for it, you know? Besides, the one who destroyed the things in the town was all because of Tousen-san's swords, right?" (Beowulf)

"...I don't know about that!" (Lior)



Extra/Bonus 1

After that, the kid and I continued traveling, a big lake... and a town facing the lake, and I came to that town, Pa-... Paradise.

"...It's Parade." (Beowulf)

"What, I haven't said anything, right?" (Lior)

"No, but I feel like you are remembering wrong name again..." (Beowulf)

I thought that it was a usually floating town, I see... was it called Parade? Well, as long as the name was almost right.

Then, there seemed to be a town called Romani on the opposite side of the lake from the Parade. According to the information gathered by the kid, there was some kind of heroic event happened in Romanio.

So, when I came to Romanio...

"...What is this stone statue?" (Lior)

"You mean this? This is Hokuto-sama who protected the town together with the Hero-sama. You'll be blessed if you stroke the head." (??)

There was also a stone statue of a Hundred Wolves here.

I asked the people of the town and I was told that it was built by the volunteers of the beastkin. Now, it seemed to be honored as the guardian of battle and journey.

“Rather than Sirius-san, I feel that it is better to follow the trace of this Hundred Wolves.” (Beowulf)

“I would like to fight him soon...” (Lior)



Extra/Bonus 2

On a certain day, there was information about a young man who went on a trip together with the famous Ikki Tousen.

And then, we finally succeeded in making contact with that young man.

{I have a question. What did you learn when you travel together with him?} (??)

✂For the sake of privacy protection, the voice of the young man is being processed.

“Basically, he moves on instinct. He loves swords and meals... Yeah, if I have to give an analogy, he is like wild monster. He is fine even if he eat wild grasses or meats contains some poison. As a conclusion, you can’t understand anything about that Ojii-san.” (Beowulf)

{I see. Well then, if I may ask, what kind of encounters you had with him?} (Reporter)

“If I say in a short sentence... it is hell. Thief extermination–... trampling is obvious. While screaming when there seems to be strong monsters, he easily went into dangerous mountains and monster nests... I... how many times... how many times... arrgghh!?” (Beowulf)

Since the young man started to become crazy, the contact this time ended here.



At a glance, he seemed to be a forgetful Jii-san, and it didn't matter what remained in his brain... In other words, it is a personality that lives with instinct.

If his brain is divided into ten portions...

Sword – Struggle – Rival... 6

Emilia... 2

Meals... 1

Kid... 0.5

Other things... 0.5

It felt like this.



PDF by: traitorAIZEN